

Chapter 543 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

“You people! All of you are too arrogant!” Never would Johnson have ever expected that Nora would solve the problem in such a simple and crude manner in front of the members of the inspection unit.

Was she not at all concerned about getting in trouble?

She was too much!

Johnson looked straight at the people from the inspection unit and pointed at Morris and Nora. “Did you guys see that? That is exactly how Captain Ford operates! Everything he does is utterly non-compliant with the rules and regulations! Also, they have stolen what they are supposed to be guarding! How can they extract the gene serum from patients?! What makes them any different from the members of the mysterious organization?!” An indignant Johnson criticized them accusingly.

The people from the inspection unit looked at the bed and asked, “What do we do? Is it possible to still extract the serum that has been injected into him?”

Next to him, the lip corners of the doctor who had come along with them spasmed. “Of course not,” he replied.

After the man spoke, he craned his neck and glanced at the bed. Then, he said, “Terry’s condition is simply too serious, though. It is near-impossible for anyone to take a bullet through the temples and survive.

“Never mind, let’s just take them back with us for now and take our time to investigate!”

There was nothing the people from the inspection unit could do, either. They could only look at Morris, Nora, and Janson and say, “The three of you, please follow us back to the station to assist in the investigation!”

Janson looked at his father. He wanted to say something, but Morris suddenly said, “Terry is here on his last breath. Let Janson stay, I will come with you instead.”

Terry had gotten injured while on duty, so everyone in the department felt a lot of heartache for him. Upon hearing what he said, after a moment’s consideration, the group of them said to Janson, “You can stay in the hospital

and observe your father's condition for now. However, you are not allowed to leave the hospital, and you must also make sure that you are available whenever we summon you!"

Gratitude welled up in Janson in this instant.

He looked at Morris and thought of how Johnson had called him unkind just now just because he had detained Mark, who had tried to punish Karl for his sake...

But as it turned out, deep down, Captain Ford understood everything better than anyone else.

Janson's resentment towards Morris for defending Karl all this time disappeared.

With his eyes red, he nodded. "Okay! Thank you, Captain Ford!"

Morris patted him on the shoulder quietly. Then, he looked at Nora. Just as he was about to speak, Nora yawned and said, "I will cooperate with the investigation."

Morris breathed a sigh of relief.

He was really afraid that the woman would leave the hospital in a moment of pique and end up getting into a conflict with the people from the inspection unit.

After all, she tended to employ unorthodox methods and was often defiant of authority.

While he was thinking about it, he heard Justin next to him suddenly say, "Excuse me, but where will you be taking them to? How long will the investigation be? Also, can they bring their own bedding?"

Upon hearing this, Morris' heart lifted slightly and he felt some inexplicable joy. A moment later, sure enough, he heard the people from the inspection unit hesitate for a moment before they replied, "Yes, they can."

"Alright, I will make some preparations, then."

Thus, half an hour later, when Morris and Nora got out of the inspection unit's car together, they immediately saw a group of attendants standing in front of the entrance to the special department.

Two of the attendants were carrying a 6 feet mattress. Some were carrying pillows and some were carrying quilts. All of them were standing there respectfully.

Justin did not take the same car as them, but he was also standing there calmly. When he saw them, he waved at the person who had led the inspection unit during the operation and said, "Hi~"

Everyone: "..."

Morris stared at Justin, and then glanced at Nora who couldn't stop yawning. It seemed like she couldn't even keep her eyes open anymore. All of a sudden, he felt really good. How frustrated he had felt when those two treated him this way the last time was how happy he currently was.

Because they had said that they could bring their own beddings—after all, Nora and Morris' actions were still under investigation, and both of them were talents from the special department—they couldn't request that they take the beddings back now, either. They could only watch helplessly as Justin entered the department with all the bedding.

He chose the most spacious interrogation room there, after all, if the room was too small, the big mattress wouldn't fit.

Then, they speedily transformed the interrogation room into a hotel room in just two minutes.

Nora entered and took off her shoes. Although she also felt that Justin's actions were a little exaggerated, she nevertheless obediently sat on the bed.

After that, someone from the inspection unit entered and said, "Ms. Nora Smith, please cooperate with us in the investigation. May I know if,"

"Can I close my eyes and rest for a while?"

Nora suddenly spoke and interrupted the other party. "... Yes, sure."

He assumed that she would just be napping for half an hour when she asked to “rest for a while”, but unexpectedly... When he exited the room, he immediately saw Justin standing outside. He closed the door obediently and instructed, “She hasn’t slept for three days. You can ask her your questions after she wakes

up.”

Although he didn’t know how Justin had entered the inspection unit’s premises-after all, strangers were not allowed entry-the man in charge of interrogating Nora nevertheless replied, “... Alright, I guess!”

They were all colleagues. He mustn’t go too far!

And then...

He learned the meaning of the words “Queen of Sleep”.

Five hours later, he came over and found that Justin had moved a chair over to the door. The man, who was sitting outside the door, shushed him.

Surprised, the interrogator asked, “She’s still asleep?” “Yes.”

Justin sighed. “After all, my Nora forgets to even eat and sleep once she starts working. She doesn’t know what rest is at all. Sigh!”

The corners of his lips spasmed. “Alright.”

When he turned to leave, Justin suddenly said, “Um...”

When he turned back, Justin said, “Can you tell the people in the interrogation room next door to keep it down a little? The interrogation rooms here are not as soundproof as I’d thought!”

While Nora was dead to the world, the situation in the hospital was also changing.

With Morris temporarily taken away, Johnson became the provisional leader of the special department. He also stayed in the hospital and stood outside Terry’s ward.

Five hours had passed. After checking and analyzing Terry’s condition, the forensic doctor came out. Johnson hurriedly asked, “How is he?”

He suppressed his nervousness.

He knew that there was no way Terry would survive. No matter how godly one's medical skills were, surely there was no way missing brain cells could be recovered, right?

But unexpectedly, the forensic doctor's brows drew together tightly, and then, with a fervent look on his face, he said, "It's too amazing! It's simply too amazing!" A foreboding feeling welled up in Johnson. "What happened?"

The man replied, "Terry's brain cells are really recovering!!" They were recovering?

Johnson was utterly stunned. He said incredulously, "What?"

The doctor took a deep breath and said, "Terry will really be able to wake up in another day's time!"

Johnson had always been someone who could keep himself calm.

From the start to the end, he had never believed that someone who had taken a bullet through the temples could survive.

That was why he had not done anything all this time. Neither would he leave behind any potential blackmail material for Nora.

However, things were starting to develop more and more bizarrely.

Even the inspection unit's forensic doctor was saying that Terry had a chance of regaining consciousness?

However, he mustn't panic.

Regaining consciousness did not mean that he would remember the past! Surely there was no way newly-grown brain cells would retain past memories, right?

He couldn't help asking, "Would he remember what had happened in the past?"

The forensic doctor replied, "One's memories are stored in the central nervous system. As long as the nerves are not destroyed, the memories could be retained. It all still depends on Terry's condition after he wakes up!"

Johnson was dumbfounded when he heard this.

The forensic doctor went back into the ward and continued to observe Terry's condition.

Johnson stood outside. Then, he suddenly turned and headed outside. When he was about to go down the stairs, he saw Lily supporting Quentin as he walked about in the corridor.

Shockingly enough, Quentin, whose body had been limp all over, could already walk a great distance without any help or stops.

Lily was even giving him compliments. She said, "Nice! Your recovery is progressing so fast!"

Quentin explained, "Yeah, I can feel my body repairing itself bit by bit every day. I can feel the bones growing, it's as if something is bubbling inside me... It's amazing! I'd always known that Nora's medical skills were amazing, but I didn't expect them to be this good!"

Lily also nodded. "I finally understand why people are chasing after the gene serum. It's simply too amazing!"

Johnson kept walking downstairs as he listened to their conversation.

He lit up a cigarette downstairs in the hospital and started smoking, his emotions becoming more and more irritable.

He extinguished the cigarette butt and tossed it into the trash can. Only then did he get into his car and make his way to the special department.

As soon as he stepped inside the special department, everyone there gathered around him. They looked at him and asked, "Captain Johnson, what happened to Captain Ford? Did he really violate the regulations?"

"Captain Johnson, shouldn't Mark be released by now?" The attitude of the people in the department towards Johnson had clearly become a lot more enthusiastic than before, all just because Morris hadn't immediately taken revenge for Janson when the accident happened. This had made everyone unhappy with him.

Johnson smiled and replied, "He's fine, they are just trying to thoroughly investigate what had happened. All of you are also aware that Captain Ford's way of doing things is too non-compliant with the rules. Sigh! Alright, let's just free Mark for now! Also, you all shouldn't be gathering here. Go and do what you're supposed to be doing!" Everyone nodded.

They wanted to say more, but Johnson had already entered his office. He took out another cigarette and started to smoke. He was still waiting-waiting for further news from the hospital about Terry's condition. Brain damage could lead to many different scenarios. He couldn't take any risks yet!

After some time, it gradually turned dark outside.

Someone suddenly pushed open the door to Johnson's office. An excited Mark rushed in and said, "Johnson, I think Karl is about to be convicted of his crimes!"

Johnson was surprised. "What do you mean?"

Mark replied, "Janson just contacted me and said that Terry opened his eyes today! He obviously wanted to say something, but because he couldn't control his body yet, he couldn't speak. Janson also said that Terry will be able to speak after another day's time. When that happens, we will have a testimony! Let's see what Karl has to say after that!"

Panic entered Johnson's eyes, but he nevertheless feigned surprise and said, "Really? That's great!"

After Mark reported the "good news", he left the office.

Johnson stayed in the office for a while more. He suddenly extinguished the cigarette. A sharp look flashed in his eyes. After that, he went out and called Mark over.

He instructed, "Interrogate Karl overnight and try your best to get him to confess to his crimes! This will be a gift for Terry once he wakes up!"

A fierce look appeared in Mark's eyes. "Don't worry, I will definitely get you a satisfactory outcome!"

Johnson nodded. "I'll head to the hospital and watch over Terry, and strive to get a statement from him! This way, we'll be able to have Karl convicted as quickly as possible!"

"Yes, sir."

Johnson then went out and drove off. However, he did not go to the hospital. He stopped by a pharmacy and bought some drugs capable of instantly suffocating someone...

When Johnson arrived at the hospital, he found Janson asleep outside Terry's ward.

He looked around vigilantly.

As a professional with many years of experience in the industry, he had been suspecting all this time that all of this was just a trap that Morris and Nora were trying to lure him into.

Even though the two of them had been taken away by the inspection unit, Johnson did not let his guard down in the least.

He had always been a perceptive, paranoid, and meticulous person. Otherwise, he would not have become Morris' mentor back then.

His rash, irritable, and upright personality on the surface was all just a disguise to establish a sense of harmlessness to the leaders above, so that he would be promoted quickly.

As facts had proven, he had indeed succeeded.

That act of his had deceived a lot of people. All of them had let their guard down around him. In fact, the people involved in innumerable workplace traps back then had all underestimated him because of his disguised carelessness, allowing him to make comebacks and turn defeat into victory.

Thus, even at this moment, Johnson's first reaction was not to enter the ward in a hurry and kill Terry, but to observe the surroundings.

With his years of experience and surprisingly sharp intuition, he made sure that there wasn't anyone watching him in the surroundings and that he wasn't

being plotted against by anyone. At last, he lightly pushed open the door to the ward and went in.

In the ward, Terry was lying on the bed. He had lost a lot of weight due to his coma over the past few days. His head was wrapped in white gauze, and he was unconscious, his eyes closed.

The first thing Johnson did was inspect the ward. Even after confirming that there weren't any surveillance cameras there, he did not immediately inject the toxic chemicals into Terry. Instead, he observed his vitals.

His heart rate was maintained at a little past sixty and was very stable. Although it was a little slower than normal, it was still considered healthy.

The other numbers were also indeed very good, which indicated that Terry was alive and recovering

The gene serum was indeed impressive.

With that in mind, Terry avoided all the angles that might allow one to photograph him, took out the deadly chemicals from his pocket, and injected them right into Terry.

He moved smoothly in one go without any hesitation whatsoever, fully exhibiting the competency of a professional.

When he was done, he took a step back. Shortly after, the monitor emitted a sharp beep. He gave Janson a push before he even woke up. Then, he shouted, "Janson, quick, come over and take a look! What's the matter with Terry?"

Janson opened his eyes in a daze. Upon hearing the warning alarm from the monitor, blood drained from his face. The hospital staff had also rushed over by then. Unfortunately, the heart rate monitor was only showing a straight line.

Terry was dead.

He had died a day after being injected with the gene serum. The cause of death was cardiac arrest, which seemed like a heart attack, yet also seemed like it was caused by the gene serum.

His body was taken away by the people from the inspection unit. Janson was extremely dispirited. Never would he have thought things would turn out like this. Quentin was obviously still well and alive in the ward next door... When news of the incident reached the special department, most of the colleagues felt their hearts sinking.

Johnson quickly returned to the department to counsel everyone. He sighed and said, "The gene serum was nothing good right from the start. Most people have lost their lives after being injected with it. I was already opposed to the idea back when Nora wanted to use it to treat Terry, but they simply refused to listen... And Morris, too. I really don't know how Nora managed to brainwash him so badly that he actually trusts her so much and goes along with her ridiculous actions!"

The others also sighed.

Janson stared at Johnson.

He had a suspicion in his heart, but he didn't know whether he should trust Johnson or not. Seemingly sensing his hostility, Johnson walked up to him and said, "Janson, you now understand why I tipped off the inspection unit, right? I really did it for Terry! The gene serum cannot be counted on at all! God knows how much Terry must have suffered during the past few days! I wonder if he could feel any pain when he was unconscious..."

As Johnson spoke, Janson's eyes reddened.

Johnson sighed and said, "For all his life, Terry had been at odds with the people behind the gene serum. I never expected that he would still have to suffer such torture before his death. Janson, can you understand my good intentions?"

Janson suddenly clenched his fists. Nevertheless, he replied sensibly, "Nora only used the gene serum in order to save my father's life, even though it failed in the end... The real murderer is Karl Moore!"

He said, "I request that we close the case and convict Karl as soon as possible!"

Johnson shook his head and sighed. After a while, he said, "The special department has the right to convict a criminal of their crimes, but the problem is that only the acting director has the right to do that! Now that Morris has

been taken away by the inspection unit, no one in the department has the right to do that anymore!”

He frowned at once and said, “I wonder when the investigation into Morris will be completed. Also, when will the new acting director be assigned?”

The moment he said that, Janson was slightly taken aback.

He, who was still in the throes of pain from losing his father, got the vague feeling that Johnson was bringing up the matter because he wanted to fight for power. But before he could say anything, Mark, who was next to him, said angrily, “That’s easy! We can jointly propose to remove Captain Ford from his post and then support Captain Johnson as the acting director in the interim! When that happens, you will be able to convict Karl of his crimes!”

Johnson frowned when he heard what he said. “That’s... not quite a good idea, is it? Although Morris has done something muddleheaded, it was Nora who had deceived him...”

Mark immediately gritted his teeth and said, “Captain Ford has indeed become muddleheaded! The way he looks at Nora isn’t right. For so many years, he has always been firm and impartial, but how many outlandish things has he done for Nora? All I did was interrogate Karl for a short while the other time, yet he actually locked me up!”

Mark and Janson were best buddies. He often went over to their place for meals. As his senior, Terry had also taught him a lot, and he had benefited a lot from his teachings.

That was why Mark was so worked up. He didn’t even wait for Johnson to speak and immediately said, “A lot of people in the department think so too. Just wait for it, Captain Johnson, I’ll take care of this!”

After speaking, Mark ran off.

Janson looked at him from the back, his eyes were all red.

A day later, the inspection unit came to the special department, planning to investigate the incident about Terry and also to announce the final outcome. As the incident had blown up a great deal in the special department, and also because Morris had gone against everyone’s will to protect Karl, they had decided to hold a huge conference to resolve the matter.

Seeing everything going smoothly, Johnson finally relaxed. He felt that things were undoubtedly going very smoothly and there wouldn't be any unexpected issues.

Karl's case had already been reported to the organization. Many people knew about this matter, and it attracted wide attention. Of course, this was still Captain Johnson's doing

Morris was powerful and had accumulated a lot of connections over the years. After the incident, many people had spoken up for him and put pressure on the inspection unit. The inspection unit had originally planned to let Morris be released early, but with Old Terry's death along with Captain Johnson's actions, it was not appropriate to let him go. After all, if they were to forcefully let him go now, it would probably arouse the displeasure of the crowd.

The large conference room of the special department could accommodate a hundred people. All the staff members of the special department were present. Morris had broken the law and helped Nora give Old Terry the gene serum. This matter was going to be judged today. After all, Morris's actions at that time were to save people, so the inspection unit did not know how to punish him.

At this moment, the meeting room was fully packed.

Most of the people inside were divided into two parts.

A portion of them was of Morris's loyal supporters. They had worked with him for many years and believed in him. They even said, "Captain Ford is also doing this to save people! If there are lives in danger, would we not prioritize saving people over violating some rules?"

The other group was led by Mark.

Janson was heartbroken and depressed, but Mark was indignant and retorted, "Then why didn't he convict Karl even after so long? He didn't even allow me to interrogate him! There must be something wrong!"

"That's right. Don't we know what gene serums are? They're harmful! They're poison! This is what we've been fighting against. Over the years, how many colleagues have been sacrificed to fight against the mysterious organization that makes this gene serum? In the end, you want to use this thing on one of our own? How ridiculous!"

The person supporting Morris said, "But Captain Ford did it to save people!" "But Old Terry is dead! He's not saved! The facts have proven that we were right! Captain Ford is too extreme. The special department has even become his one-man hall! Also, why is the trial against Karl Moore delayed? We clearly have all the evidence!"

As the crowd was in a heated argument, the door to the meeting room was pushed open. Then, accompanied by a staff member from the inspection unit, Morris strode into the meeting room.

The moment he entered, the entire conference room instantly became silent.

Everyone looked at him.

As he had been detained for two days, a black beard had appeared on Morris's chin. At this moment, he looked more like a mature man.

His gaze was like an eagle as it swept across everyone present, causing them to shut their mouths.

Morris and a few people from the Ministry of Supervision sat on the stage and looked down. One of them then started speaking, "Alright, now the special department is divided into two factions regarding Morris's situation. One half thinks that Captain Ford has been negligent in his work. As long as he apologizes to Janson, this matter will be over. The other half thinks that Captain Ford has used illegal drugs from the special department recklessly and seriously violated the law. He should be dismissed from his post till further investigation! Now, we want to ask the public's opinion!"

As soon as he said this, the two sides started arguing again.

Their words were the same as earlier.

Looking at the heated discussion, Captain Johnson suddenly said, "Um, I'll say something. Everyone, please listen to me."

He sighed and said, "I was the one who brought Morris into this industry. Now that I'm going to judge him, I really can't bear it. But there's nothing I can do. He has done something wrong and made some bad judgments! If anyone gets hurt in the future and says that the gene serum can be used to save lives, will he break the law and take it out again? We have to firmly put an end to such things! Therefore, in this situation, I suggest reducing the punishment

for Morris. A dismissal is too serious. We should let him work from the bottom again and punish him with three months of salary cut as a show of service. I wonder if anyone has any objections?"

This kind of neutralized opinion instantly shook the people below.

Those who originally thought that Morris should be punished but still had some feelings for him and could not bear to remove him from the Investigation Committee immediately nodded.

Those who were originally on Morris's side also felt that this plan was reasonable...

For a moment, this proposal from Captain Johnson received the agreement of most people!

Mark stood up as well. "To be honest, Captain Ford has indeed worked hard and provided meritorious service all these years. I think it's too big of a punishment for him to be dismissed. I can't bear for Captain Morris to leave either. I think what Captain Johnson has said can be done! If he starts from the bottom again, I believe Captain Ford will be able to rely on his contributions to return to this position quickly!"

Everyone nodded. "Yes."

When Captain Johnson heard this, he was very satisfied.

He was doing this on purpose!

Morris had too many connections and too deep of a background. He could not possibly slap Morris to death. He could only take a step back and let him resign. Then, the chair of the Special Case Department Head would be his now!

This was his goal.

Seeing that everyone below had agreed, the people from the inspection unit then looked at Morris. "Captain Ford, do you have any objections to this punishment?"

With that, everyone looked at Morris.

Morris lowered his eyes. After a moment, he suddenly looked up and said slowly, "Yes."

Everyone fell silent again.

Captain Johnson frowned. "Morris, this punishment is already very light. You knew the rules and violated them, so you have to pay the price. People can't just be forgiven when they've done something wrong!"

"You're right."

Morris laughed coldly and suddenly stood up. "It's very hard to cover up when you've done something wrong. What about a murderer? Compared to my mistake, isn't your mistake more serious?"

These words made Captain Johnson's pupils shrink. He sneered and said, "Morris, Karl keeps saying that I killed Old Terry, but do you really trust him over me? You've really disappointed me. Do you have any evidence to say that I have killed someone?"

"Of course."

Morris said slowly, "Not only do I have evidence, but I also have a witness!"

With that, he looked at the door. He was clearly here to be judged, but he turned the tables and said, "Come in."

Accompanying this sentence, Nora strode in lazily and yawned, pushing a wheelchair along.

Her face was filled with impatience as if she had not slept enough. Her expression was not very good.

However, no one noticed that at the moment. Everyone's attention was on the person in the wheelchair.

It was Old Terry.

When Old Terry appeared on the scene, the entire audience was shocked.

Janson stood up in shock and looked at Old Terry in disbelief.

Why was his father here?

He should be in the hospital's mortuary. While Janson was so shocked, Captain Johnson's heart was already in turmoil!

Old Terry... He was clearly dead!

He couldn't be alive after he had drugged him.

He swallowed hard and looked at Old Terry in horror. The person who had appeared there was like a demon! A demon that had climbed out of hell.

Before Captain Johnson could speak, Janson's eyes were already red. He took a step forward. "Dad, you're still alive?"

Old Terry's head was wrapped in gauze. The gauze on his head covered half his head, and the other half was horribly swollen. His voice seemed to be blocked by something in his throat. It was very hoarse, and it was very uncomfortable to hear.

He slowly said, "I'm not dead, I'm still alive."

It was really him!

Everyone present widened their eyes. Why was he still alive?

Old Terry's next answer puzzled everyone. "The gene serum can even restore brain cells. How could I have died?"

Captain Johnson swallowed.

He thought that he could rest easy after seeing Old Terry die with his own eyes. However, he did not expect him to be alive! Had the gene serum cured the poison he had injected?

How could... this be?!

Thus, in the end, even if he was meticulous, he had still lost to fate!

"Uncle Terry, it's great that you're still alive!" Mark's feelings were purer than others. It was also easier for him to recover from his daze. He rushed to Old Terry and said with red eyes, "Tell everyone now who shot you?!"

With that, he complained aggrievedly, "Karl has been arrested, but he refused to confess. Captain Ford actually said that he felt aggrieved. He even accused

Captain Johnson of killing you. How is this possible... You're awake now, tell everyone who shot you that day!"

Mark glared at Morris. Before Old Terry could speak, he said, "Captain Ford, if Old Terry personally testifies, you can use it as absolute evidence, right? If you still think the evidence is insufficient, we won't accept it if you don't punish Karl Moore!"

"Right, we can't accept this!"

Behind Mark, many hot-blooded youths from the special department shouted.

Morris's gaze was sharp. Despite being criticized and questioned by so many former companions, he said calmly, "Let Old Terry speak first!"

Everyone looked at Old Terry.

Mark even walked to Old Terry. "Uncle Terry, hurry up and speak. Karl framed Captain Johnson and Captain Ford believed Karl's words. Quickly clear Captain Johnson's name!"

Captain Johnson, who was shielded behind him, had a livid expression, his eyes flickering.

He knew that he was completely finished this time.

Old Terry coughed a few times. It seemed like even his cough was very uncomfortable. He even touched his head and looked at Captain Johnson. "Old Johnson, I had already woken up yesterday. I didn't come yesterday was because I couldn't figure out why you had shot me?"

With that, the entire place fell silent

Everyone seemed baffled by this sentence, but they also seemed to understand it. Then, they suddenly looked at Captain Johnson.

Janson was the first to react. He shouted at Captain Johnson, "Uncle Johnson, it was you who shot my father? You! But why... Why did you try to kill my father?!"

Captain Johnson narrowed his eyes and refused to admit it. "Old Terry, are you confused? I think you're just confused. How could I try to kill you? Have you been bewitched?"

With that, the people around looked at Old Terry.

The people in the special department were all passionate youths.

In order to carry out their mission, they had sacrificed countless people and many comrades. Therefore, the camaraderie between them was comparable to that of real brothers.

Captain Johnson was their role model whom they looked up to.

Many young people were comforted by Captain Johnson when they felt lost in life.

Therefore, after the incident, everyone would definitely choose to trust their leaders and comrades!

Even at this moment, everyone trusted Captain Johnson more.

Mark shouted, "Uncle Terry, what are you talking about?"

Old Terry sighed and continued, "Old Johnson, I understand now. Back then, Karl was my informant. When I retired, I transferred him to you. At that time, I was not in good health. I stayed in the hospital for half a month and was even in a coma. Before I fainted, I gave you his contact details and asked you to tell him that I'd retired him from undercover duty. You didn't tell him, did you?"

Captain Johnson pursed his lips. "Old Terry, I don't know what you're talking about!"

Old Terry sighed again. "You know, I have evidence that he's an undercover agent! Old Johnson, I've never doubted you. Over the years, you've used the intelligence he provided to solve many cases. Don't you know how you got from a lowly beat cop to where you are today? How could you still treat him like this?! The reason you killed me and framed him was because of that charity fund, right?"

When Captain Johnson heard Old Terry's last sentence, he knew that he could not hide it anymore! Old Terry said slowly, "Your son is overseas. He bought a sports car worth \$5,000,000. Where did this money come from?"

Captain Johnson stammered, "How... how would I know? He didn't buy a sports car at all. What nonsense are you talking about?"

Old Terry's voice was very hoarse, and his words were sharp and unpleasant. "We have all the records of whether he bought it or not. I can get the bank to send them over right now. The money your son spent buying a car and a house outside are all from the charity foundation Karl gave you, right?"

Captain Johnson was flustered. "You..."

"Back then, when you contacted him with the information I gave you, you did not reveal your identity. He thought that you were me, so he told you that he wanted to give New York a charity. Then, when he talked about money, you were tempted, right? You pretended to be me because Karl only trusted me! You took the money and put it all in your own pocket! We've already investigated your bank accounts. Old Johnson, you can't deny it!"

When Captain Johnson heard these words, he knew that he had to admit it no matter how much he lied.

Morris shouted, "Captain Johnson, aren't you going to confess now?"

Captain Johnson looked at him suddenly and shouted, "Even if I confess, you can't escape from what you've done with the gene serum!"

Captain Johnson hated Morris to the core.

He was ashamed to face Old Terry. After all, he was the one who had shot him.

Karl had given him a lot of money over the years.

Therefore, when he saw that Karl was captured by the special department, Johnson was afraid that he would expose his identity and lead the special department to investigate the fund.

Captain Johnson helped Karl escape because he wanted him to leave New York and be of use to him in the future.

Unfortunately, Karl had actually stayed for his daughter's wedding.

In order to prevent any accidents, Captain Johnson had gotten the sniper to shoot him at the wedding. He wanted to kill him so that there would be no risk.

Unfortunately, Nora had stirred things up again. After that, she had arrested Karl. Morris had watched Karl closely and made him unable to do anything

Karl had forced him to look for Old Terry. Helpless, he could only call Old Terry over.

However, no matter how much he calculated, he had missed Nora and Morris's persistence!

If Morris was not so persistent, he could have convicted Karl after Old Terry died or gotten someone to kill him. The matter could still be controlled.

Unfortunately, Morris was too protective of Karl!

And Nora, this little b*tch, actually developed some gene serum and saved Old Terry, who should have died!

It was all their fault, all their fault!

Captain Johnson knew that he had already been exposed. There was nothing else to say. He shouted angrily, "And you, Nora. I asked you to come to the special department to catch the mysterious organization, not to develop the gene serum. But what have you done? Do you think you're much better than me? I just want money, but you're in cahoots with the people from the mysterious organization. What you do is no different from the mysterious organization!"

Morris looked at him and sighed deeply. "Captain Johnson, what we're talking about now is your murder charge." Captain Johnson sneered and said, "I'm at most considered to have attempted murder! But your and Nora's crimes are far too serious. I just want to ask you something. If gene serum can treat illnesses and save lives, and can even bring people back to life, then what is the meaning of the years of work we have done targeting the mysterious organization?! This research they've done is beneficial to humans!" "Your actions make all our actions seem so ridiculous! Is the birth of this drug supposed to make us hurry up and submit to the mysterious organization?" "And you, Old Terry. Don't look at me like that. You're stupid. You don't know how to earn money. Is it wrong for me to make money? I've risked my life so many times. On what basis can I not live as well as others? Those people from wealthy families can casually earn money, live in mansions, and drive good cars. But what about us?"

He looked around. "Our existence is a joke! This drug developed by the mysterious organization that we've been trying so hard to catch has become your life-saving straw!"

“Morris, I attempted murder. You’re not any better off than me. It was you who made the special department dispensable!” If the drugs in the mysterious organization could really save lives, should the mysterious organization really be outlawed?

This question appeared in the hearts of many members of the special department at the same time.

They had fought for so many years and sacrificed so many companions. What was the reason? Was the justice they insisted on even right?

Just as everyone was confused, they suddenly heard a scoff. “Old Johnson, in that case, you admit to your crimes?”

Captain Johnson narrowed his eyes. “Yes, I confess. I attempted murder and choose to surrender. My sentence will be lighter!”

“But regarding Morris, I strongly urge the Ministry of Supervision to deal with him seriously! He covers the sky with one hand in the special department and is playing a good role in reversing the situation! Heh, his thoughts are evil and his heart is already leaning towards the mysterious organization!”

As soon as Captain Johnson finished speaking, he saw Old Terry suddenly laugh softly. That laughter was clear and was no longer as hoarse as before.

Captain Johnson was stunned.

Everyone was stunned and looked at Old Terry in disbelief.

Old Terry reached out and pulled at the skin at the chin, tearing off a piece to reveal Brenda’s stunning face!

This time, no one could speak.

This sudden change in attitude caught everyone off guard.

After tearing off the fake skin on her face, Brenda stood up and took off the wig. Her beautiful hair fell down and she stood there beautifully in her hospital gown. “Captain Johnson, I’m sorry to inform you that Old Terry is really dead. You didn’t commit attempted murder. You have committed a real murder!”

Captain Johnson widened his eyes. He took a step back and looked at Brenda before looking at Morris and Nora again...

At this moment, someone instantly understood something... This group of people had no evidence of him killing anyone. Even the transfer record was forged carefully. It was difficult for anyone to notice.

When he killed Old Terry, he had done it flawlessly!

Morris had no evidence to prove Karl's innocence. After all, he had the motive to kill Old Terry. Unless Old Terry said it himself and testified as a witness.

However, Old Terry was already on his last breath at the time. He could not have lived!

Therefore, that gene serum was not so magical at all. It only healed Quentin's injuries, but it could not revive the dead!

Old Terry was really dead!

However, this group of people had put on a show for him. It was a miracle that Quentin's bones had recovered. Johnson had seen a medical miracle with his own eyes, so he believed that Old Terry could be treated.

The moment Old Terry appeared, he did not doubt his authenticity.

However, he had forgotten what Brenda was best at-Disguise!

When Captain Johnson figured this out, the people from the inspection unit said, "Captain Johnson, you've already admitted yourself that you killed Old Terry. The motive and evidence are enough! What else do you have to say?!"

What else could he say?

Nothing!

Captain Johnson knew that it was useless to say anything now. He looked at Morris and Nora angrily. "I want to say that these two people have violated the rules of the special department and used the gene serum to treat Quentin without permission. This is all Nora's private use of public power!"

Even if he died, he had to make Morris and Nora suffer along!

However, as soon as he finished speaking, he saw Nora, who was behind Brenda, yawn heavily. Then, she said casually, "Gene serum? Are you talking about this?"

She casually picked up an iron box and opened it. There were rows of transparent glass bottles inside.

Nora slowly curved her lips. "These are just vitamins."

Nora was very focused when she worked. When she was overseas, she would often work for a few days and nights in a row. After that, she would sleep for a very long time. Therefore, she had specially made a vitamin solution to prevent hypoglycemia in her sleep.

Lily only needed to inject this solution into her body. She did not need to wake up herself. She could sleep for 72 hours, or even more.

Captain Johnson was stunned. "How... how is this possible?" Nora raised her eyebrows. Because she had not slept enough, her temper was a little grumpy as she spoke impatiently in a hoarse voice, "The inspection unit has already collected the needles and syringes I used on Old Terry that day. They have checked the composition inside and confirmed that it is indeed a vitamin solution. Why do you think Captain Ford and I were let out?"

They had been acquitted!

Furthermore, the Inspection unit had cooperated with them and put on a show!

As for the medicine used on Quentin...

The gene serum Nora had pretended to inject was all a cover to fool Janson into convincing Captain Johnson.

The drug actually used for Quentin's treatment was administered later on!

She did not sleep for three days and three nights to synthesize an excellent drug for the recovery of his bones using the medical skills given by her master, Dr. Zabe. This medicine was the Bone Adhesion Balm.

Quentin was finally able to stand up because of that drug. The drug would not take effect that fast, but to help her convince Captain Johnson, Quentin had stood up forcefully and walked back and forth.

Now, he was lying on the bed again. He had been injured for a hundred days, not to mention that his bones had been rejoined. He had to recuperate well later on.

As for Old Terry...

Since his temples had exploded, there was no way to save him and he had died on the very same day. However, how and when to tell the others about his death was all planned by Nora. At this point, the truth was revealed. Captain Johnson was arrested and taken away by the Inspection unit. What awaited him next was trial and execution. The death penalty was unavoidable. After all, his crime was too serious.

Janson realized that his father had really passed away and started crying. Mark and the others felt as if their worlds had collapsed.

Just as everyone was feeling mixed emotions, Ruth suddenly rushed out.

Her arm was still wrapped in bandages and her charming face was filled with fear. She said, "Officers, I want to report something!"

When she said this, the people from the Inspection unit looked at her.

Ruth said, "Captain Johnson had asked me to develop a plan to interrogate Karl. I found it very strange at the time, so I kept delaying the plans. Now, I understand. Fortunately, I trusted Captain Ford. So that's how it is! Anyway, I want to report something!"

The people from the Inspection unit and the surrounding special departments all looked at her.

Ruth said righteously, "When I went to his room to find some information, I realized that his computer was switched on. He had logged onto an external network. I checked his records and realized that Captain Johnson had posted a message on a foreign underworld forum. He said that Nora had a gene serum, he was trying to attract overseas organizations to fight for it. I think the reason he did that was also to stop Old Terry's treatment."

Her words made the expressions of the people change drastically.

Captain Johnson had already committed a heinous crime by killing people for money. However, they did not expect him to be in contact with foreign

underworld? They definitely needed to investigate if he was a spy! The officer from the Inspection unit said, "Comrade Ruth, the intelligence you have provided is very important. We will thoroughly investigate the matter! If any of you people have any other information for us, you have to tell it in time!"

Ruth's eyes were red as she lowered her head. "Although I grew up overseas and was recommended by Captain Johnson to join the special department, I knew this place was my home when I came to New York. I didn't expect Captain Johnson to be such a vile person..."

The people from the Inspection unit could only comfort her. "It's okay. This has nothing to do with you." Ruth sighed. "I know it has nothing to do with me, but it was Captain Johnson who recommended me to the special department. This..."

The people from the Ministry of Supervision immediately calmed her down. "It's okay. The special department welcomes all talented people! Besides, you've done a good job by reporting Captain Johnson!"

Ruth heaved a sigh of relief.

This was the reason she had rushed out to snitch against Captain Johnson.

She had been recommended by Captain Johnson. If he left, she was afraid that the department would chase her away.

She hurriedly looked at Morris and said, "Captain Ford, Black Cat and I have already sorted out the interrogation plan. If we interrogate them accordingly, I guarantee that they will all speak!"

Morris stared at Ruth.

Morris was a person who cared about principles when he did things. Although Ruth had always been against Nora in the past, she had never done anything against his principles.

Moreover, Captain Johnson had just been arrested. If he turned around and dealt with Ruth, he would leave a bad impression on the other people in the special department, making them feel uneasy.

At the thought of this, Morris said, "Work hard. Don't spend so much time on those trivial matters in the future!"

Ruth blushed and she said, "Yes Sir!"

Morris then looked to the side and wanted to speak to Nora, but he saw Nora and Brenda already walking out when he turned his head.

Nora was so tired that she did not want to speak, but she still looked at Brenda in confusion. "You are quite good at disguises. Your acting was very realistic." Brenda said, "Of course. I'm made use of my makeup and forgery techniques to the limit!" Nora was curious. "Can you impersonate anyone?"

Brenda said, "No, it would be very difficult to impersonate you. After all, your head is smaller than mine. I would prefer someone with a big head. I just need to add some skin and stuff like that. If I had to impersonate you... Do you think I can peel off a layer of skin?"

The two of them walked along busy chatting. Just as they left the door, they saw Justin standing in the parking lot. His tall and slender figure was noticeable at a glance.

He was leaning against the car with his legs crossed. When he saw the two of them, he immediately stood up and walked toward them.

Brenda clicked her tongue twice and said in a lazy and charming tone, "Justin, you were married to your job when you weren't with Nora in the past. Now that you have Nora, have you thrown your job away in some cold corner?"

Justin ignored her.

Instead, he opened the car door and said to Nora, "Let's go home and catch up on your sleep."

Nora nodded and got into the car.

Justin walked to the other side and was about to get into the car when Ruth suddenly came running out of the special department. When she saw him, her eyes instantly lit up and she hurried over. "Mr. Hunt, I really have something to tell you!"

Justin did not even look at her and got into the car.

Ruth had no choice but to bite her lips and shout, "It's about the child! You'll regret it if you don't listen!"

About the child?

Justin's footsteps paused as his long and cold eyes looked at her. However, he only glanced at her casually before getting into the car.

He had nothing to say to Ruth about the child.

The car started and Ruth chased after it. Just as she was about to reach the car, Lawrence suddenly came out and grabbed her. "Miss Ruth, let's talk!"

When Ruth saw that it was him again, she bit her lip in anger and said, "I really have something important to discuss with Mr. Hunt! It's about the child! His son!"

Lawrence lowered his eyes. "What's wrong with Pete? Tell me first."

Ruth's eyes were firm as she slowly said, "No, I must discuss this with Mr. Hunt face to face. I won't say anything until I see him!"

The corners of Lawrence's mouth twitched. "This trick again. Are you going to ask him out on a date when you see him? Miss Ruth, I've already seen this trick of yours a million times. I advise you to behave yourself! Mr. Hunt has a fiancée! It's Miss Smith, do you understand?"

He pursed his lips and looked at Ruth up and down. "Please take a good look at yourself. What about you compares to Miss Smith? Your face? Your figure? Or your talent? Tsk! Look in the mirror if you have the time!"

Lawrence got into the car and left behind Justin.

Ruth was left alone in embarrassment.

She clenched her fists tightly and took a deep breath after a moment. "Just wait and see! I'll expose the person you like sooner or later and make her fall from grace!!"

The limousine was driving back to the Smiths.

Justin personally drove so Nora could rest without any hindrance. He drove the car so smoothly not even a little vibration could be felt.

SU

Nora lay on the big bed on the backseat and slept with her eyes closed.

She had only fallen asleep when she suddenly sat up.

She hesitated for a moment. "Did we forget something?"

Justin looked at her. "What can I forget? Just go to sleep."

Nora's face was pale and listless. Her almond-shaped eyes were lowered and she could barely open them. When she heard Justin's words, she thought that it was probably nothing serious, so she lay down again. This time, she really fell into a deep

sleep.

Not long after their car left, Karl was released from the special department.

Everyone in the special department stared at him.

Janson had gone to settle Old Terry's funeral matters, so Mark represented him as he stood there. The moment Karl came out, he stood straight as a wall and saluted.

An undercover colleague was someone they should admire the most. However, under Captain Johnson's guidance, he had instead humiliated Karl several times over the past few days.

V

SU

At this moment, Mark really felt that he had been wrong. "Sir, I was wrong! Please hit me and vent your anger!"

Young officers were always hot-blooded. However, they could realize their mistakes and change. They did not always have bad intentions.

Karl looked at him and thought of his younger days...

He patted Mark's shoulder and said, "You did the right thing. Even if there's no evidence and you have doubts about the enemy, you must have complete faith in your comrades!"

Just as he himself had never doubted Old Terry all these years.

Even if such a thing had happened before, it should not have caused the people in the special department to have a crisis of distrust toward their comrades.

Mark's face turned even redder. "But Captain Johnson turned out to be like this. Can our comrades be trusted?"

"Yes!"

Karl replied affirmatively, "There are always exceptions. But those willing to give up everything for the people deserve respect." They could not let the people in the special department have a trust crisis because of Captain Johnson.

Mark nodded thoughtfully. At this moment, Morris held a uniform in his hand and walked to Karl with steel steps. He suddenly saluted Karl and handed him the uniform. "Karl, welcome home."

Welcome home.

These words made Karl's eyes turn red.

With trembling fingers, he slowly took the uniform and returned Morris's salute.

Then he turned and walked out.

Along the way, people from the special department kept looking at him. People saluted Karl one after another as he walked past them. With everyone's attention on him, Karl went out the door.

In the solemn and tragic atmosphere, Karl's voice suddenly came from outside the door. "Where's Nora? This heartless person. Did she not think of taking me home?! Do I have to take a taxi home?!"

Everyone was speechless.

Morris hurried over and arranged for a car from the special department to send him home.

At the Smiths.

After reaching the Smith Manor, Justin picked up Nora, who was in deep sleep, and took her inside.

The matter had been resolved, and Austin had not come to the country.

Ian was very satisfied. It was rare that he did not have a bad expression of Justin.

Justin went upstairs and gently placed Nora on the bed. Then, he heard the commotion downstairs.

His brows drew together tightly.

He went out and looked downstairs. He realized that it was Sue. At this moment, she was pointing at Tanya. "Tanya, your status is so awkward now! Your father killed a person and even killed a policeman! He's simply too lawless!"

Tanya rolled her eyes and ignored her. However, just as she was about to go upstairs, Sue said, "You're now the mistress of our family. It's too embarrassing to have a murderer as a father! Look, so many invitation letters have been sent to my house. No one dares to invite you. Therefore, Joel, don't you think I should be the one appearing as the mistress of the Smiths?"

Many people wanted to curry favor with the Smiths to do business. As the mistress, she could get many gifts from them.

Being the mistress of the Smiths was a very glorious thing.

Sue was using Tanya's bad reputation to vie for this position!

She really courted death every day.

Joel lowered his eyes. "I won't trouble you with that kind of thing."

"How is it trouble? I'm also a member of the Smiths. Besides, Tanya's status is too awkward now, and she's not suitable to appear in public. Isn't it my responsibility then?"

Almost as soon as she finished speaking, a police car stopped outside the villa with a screech.

The Smith manor was still some distance away from the gates.

Thus, when the police car stopped, the security guard hurriedly popped his head out the window and was badly frightened. "Are they here to arrest someone again?"

Puzzled, the butler went out and went up to the police car politely. Just as he was about to speak, the car window rolled down, revealing Karl's face. He asked, "Is Tanya at home?"

The butler was taken aback. "Mrs. Smith has been home all along. Mr. Moore, have you... hijacked a police car?"

Had Karl broken out of jail and even stolen a police car?

Wasn't he a little too bold?

The butler's thoughts terrified him.

Upon hearing what he said, Karl broke into a grin. He even patted the steering wheel and asked, "Is this car dashing or what?" The butler: "..."

"C'mon, cut the crap and open the door! I'm going in to look for my daughter!" Following Karl's words, the butler swallowed. He ultimately didn't dare to stop Karl from entering, so he opened the gates.

The car swayed about as Karl drove carelessly on the driveway.

In the living room.

Tanya's eyes were lowered and she kept quiet.

With a cold look on his face, Joel said, "Grandaunt Sue, I don't find my wife's status awkward at all."

Sue curled her lips disdainfully and said, "You don't have to glorify her anymore. All of New York already knows by now that her father is a murderer. This has pretty much been cemented. We also have our own contacts that we can use to find out the information we want! Tanya is not invited to any of the events in the New York circle these days. If you don't believe me, then why don't you go out and have a look yourself? Think of all the invitations that the Smiths had received when Yvonne was still around. Who is going to send the Smiths any invitations now?"

She went on. "It's not just Tanya. Even Nora is also... What is a good girl like her doing being a forensic doctor? Doesn't she find it crass dealing with dead bodies every day? It's even taboo for many people, that's why they are not sending invitations to Nora anymore, either."

"But there are many things that require a woman to come forward and take care of. Take a look at the Smiths now, how many presentable women are there?"

"Besides, I'm here this time because of a huge transaction!"

Joel narrowed his eyes and looked at Sue.

Sue said, "There isn't any land available for purchase in New York lately, right? The real estate business is gradually failing. The part of our family's business in the real estate hasn't produced any profits this year! But I daresay that this project of mine is definitely the most profitable in the real estate industry!"

Joel immediately understood what project Sue was talking about.

He immediately cut her off and said, "The Smiths will not brood over certain businesses. The real estate industry is not doing well anymore. It was a wise choice that we pulled out in time!"

He didn't give Sue a chance to speak, but stood up and pushed her out instead. He said, "Grandaunt Sue, we have a lot to do. Why don't you go home for now?"

Tanya watched the two of them.

Joel had always been a wily little fox. Even if he was obviously unhappy about something, he would still keep a smile on his face. He maintained a smiley disposition all year round and then decimated his enemies behind their backs.

He seldom got angry on the surface back then.

But he was actually starting to get physical now. It must be because what Sue was about to say had something to do with her.

As soon as the thought formed, Sue said, "Joel, don't push me. Isn't it for the sake of letting the Smiths profit that I'm here to talk about the project today?"

Are you going to deprive the Smiths of such huge profits just to protect your wife?"

Sue rushed up to Tanya and said, "Do you know? There is a big project in New York that all the companies are bidding for right now. The Smiths could have easily fought for it; it's all because of you that we have let this project slip by us!"

Tanya frowned and looked at Joel.

Joel's voice became even colder. "Grandaunt Sue, don't force me into taking action against

you!"

Sue, however, lifted her chin and said, "Then why don't you do it? But before you do, I still have to make this clear!"

She looked straight at Tanya and said, "This huge project was to build a courthouse on a plot of land in the suburbs! And since this building is so special, they require an engineering team with a crystal clear track record with the law! The Smiths have indeed never broken the law before even after being in business for so many years! But we now have a daughter-in-law with a murderer for a father! You've utterly ruined the Smiths' reputation! We can't bid on the project anymore just because of you!"

Tanya bit her lip when she heard this.

As for Joel, he immediately shouted, "Where's the housekeeper?!"

Lucy entered the room and said, "I'm here."

"Show Grandaunt Sue out!"

"Yes, sir."

Lucy took a step forward as she spoke. She grabbed Sue's hand right away and started to drag her toward the door.

Sue, however, sneered and said, "Joel, do you think this problem will just go away if you drive me out and stop me from talking? Even if I don't say anything about it, both of you should know that it's all because of her father that we have been barred from the project! Hah, we, the Smiths, have never

so brazenly broken the law all these years, but we have totally embarrassed ourselves this time! Are you still going to defend a wife like that?" To be honest, building a courthouse didn't bring much profit.

However, it was a representation of one's corporate reputation in the country!

It was indeed extremely unsightly that the Smiths' engineering team didn't even qualify to bid on the project.

However...

Joel refuted her. "We may not be able to win the project even if we bid for it, anyway! How can you blame it all on Tanya?"

Sue sneered, "With what all the outsiders are saying, the Smiths have utterly embarrassed themselves, yet you are still defending her! Not only is a matriarch like her unable to do anything for the Smiths, but she's even giving us a whole lot of trouble! Joel, I told you, I came here with a project! As long as you let me be the matriarch of the Smiths on the surface, I can convince the Department of Housing and Urban Development to give the Smiths a chance to participate in the bidding! Whether we make money or not doesn't matter; what matters is earning back the reputation we have lost!"

Joel frowned. He was about to speak when police sirens came from the door.

Sue's eyes lit up at once when she heard the police sirens. She pointed at Tanya and said excitedly, "Hear that? The police are here again! Have we become at constant loggerheads with the police? Tanya's father must have gotten himself in trouble again, they're here to arrest Tanya now!"

As soon as she said that, a wild and boorish voice came from the door. "Who dares to arrest my daughter?!"

Upon hearing this, the few of them looked over one after another and saw Karl striding in wearing a police uniform!

A shudder went through Sue when she heard his voice. Seeing that it was Karl walking in, Sue was reminded of the terror she had felt being dominated by him the last time, and her legs turned into jelly.

Karl was dressed in a police uniform, which covered all of his tattoos and made him look very righteous. It was just that there was no change to his simple and honest image.

As he entered, Karl grinned at Tanya and said, "I'm back."

Tanya's eyes reddened.

Joel put his arm around her shoulders. After greeting his daughter, Karl finally looked at Sue. Upon recognizing her, he frowned and said with displeasure, "You again?" Sue swallowed hard. "No, it's not me!"

Karl: ?

Sue was so terrified that she didn't dare to speak. Instead, she said to Tanya and Joel, "Um, I have something to do, so I'll be going now!"

She hurried out after speaking, upon which she spotted the police car parked at the door.

Sue became even more scared and almost fell onto the ground. She got into the car and immediately told the chauffeur to quickly drive off. When they reached the gates, she saw the butler instructing his subordinates, "Quick, close the gates. If anyone comes and asks about Mr. Joel's in-laws, just tell them that you don't know anything!"

"Yes, sir!"

The butler sighed. "He even has the guts to steal a police car. Surely Mr. Moore didn't really break out of prison again, right?"

Sue became even more scared and she didn't dare to say any more. She immediately urged the chauffeur to hurry up and drive back home.

But when she got home, the more Sue thought about it, the more scared she became.

She said to Samuel, "People like Karl Moore are all devils who kill without even batting an eyelid. Do you think he will come to take revenge against me?"

Samuel was, surprisingly, relatively calm. He replied, "I know that family well. Although they seem cold and ruthless, they are reliable... As long as you don't provoke them, they won't do anything to you."

Samuel just found Ian an eyesore, that's why he was always going against him. However, he had never harbored any thoughts of harming the Smiths.

Sue, however, said, "But I have already made an agreement with the other party. They will give the Smiths a chance to bid for the project and I will give them money! This way, I would also become the matriarch of the Smiths. With that, won't all the Smiths' little opportunities to make money be ours in the future?"

Samuel curled his lips disdainfully. "Dream on. The matriarch of the Smiths? You sure dare to dream big. With how stingy Ian is, he has all the power in the family tightly in his grasp, okay? His word is absolute in for the Smiths! Joel was personally taught and groomed by him. Do you think he will ever make you the matriarch of the Smiths? Don't even think about it!"

Seeing that even Samuel wasn't cooperating with her, Sue got anxious. "Why are you being such a loser? Haven't you ever thought of improving our family's conditions?"

She walked back and forth in the room. Then, she went out. "No, this won't do. I'm calling the cops!"

Samuel was taken aback. "What are you going crazy for?"

Sue replied, "I am a good, law-abiding citizen. Now that someone like him has broken out of jail again, I have to inform the police about it! Even if it is not for money, I am afraid that he will come over in the middle of the night and murder me! There are murder cases everywhere these days. It's not like you haven't seen the news!"

Before Samuel could recover, Sue had already left.

The forty to fifty-year-old woman was a bit chubby but didn't look swollen. She merely looked a little well-fed. Her butt twisted from side to side as she got into the car and went straight to the nearest police station. The moment she entered, she immediately said, "Officer, I'd like to make a police report! A murderer has broken out of jail and is now hiding at the Smith Manor!"

At the Smiths.

Karl didn't have the time to bother with Sue after she fled. Instead, he asked, "What project is it? I can talk to them!"

He was now a hero in the special department. Morris definitely wouldn't reject him if he asked to give the relevant departments a heads-up.

Joel smiled and replied, "No, it's fine. You've only just returned, you should take a good bath and rest instead!"

The fact that Karl had returned in the uniform showed that what Nora had said was all correct. From the looks of it, Karl's identity must have been reinstated.

The obstacle standing in the way of the Smiths would go away even without him speaking with the relevant authorities.

Upon hearing what Joel said, Karl sniffed himself. Then, he scratched his head and looked at Tanya. "Do I smell? I've been taking baths every day in the special department!"

As he spoke, he even stretched his arm towards Tanya so that she could take a sniff as well.

Tanya: "..."

She pushed Karl's arm away and sighed. "There are dumplings in the kitchen. Do you want some?"

Karl's eyes lit up. "Yes!"

Tanya walked to the kitchen straight away.

The servant in the kitchen said, "What do you need, Ma'am? Let me do it!"

"No, it's fine," replied Tanya. Then, she took out the frozen dumplings from the refrigerator and put them in the pot.

Karl came over. The servant smiled and said, "Mrs. Smith made these dumplings herself. She didn't let us help at all! You're so blessed, Mr. Moore!"

The simple-looking Karl couldn't stop chuckling

Ian came downstairs at this time.

He could get out of the wheelchair and walk with crutches by now, and his recovery was going well. When he saw Karl, he huffily asked, “Old man, why are you in my house again?”

Karl craned his neck and replied, “I don’t have a house in New York, so where my daughter is is my home!”

When Tanya saw Ian, she asked, “Dad, would you also like a plate of dumplings?”.

Ever since Joel started calling him “Dad”, Tanya had also changed her term of address for Ian.

But as soon as she called him “Dad”, Karl became jealous. “Girl, why are you calling him Dad? He’s not eating!”

Ian couldn’t help but smile. The moment the smile formed, his good looks immediately revealed themselves. He had always been an attractive man. Now that he was keeping himself well-maintained, and his cheeks had become a bit fleshier, he looked a lot younger than before. His smile was very elegant. He said, “I’ll have a plate.”

Initially, he hadn’t wanted to eat it, but just for the sake of annoying Karl, he would have a plate of dumplings, no matter what.

Karl said, “... My daughter made them for me! You are not allowed to eat any!”

Ian leaned on the crutches and sneered, “This is my house! Get out of here!”

While the two old men were arguing as if they were children, a group of police officers suddenly swarmed in through the doorway!

There were about ten officers. All of them were wearing bulletproof vests and had surrounded the living room. Ian frowned and asked, “What’s going on?” The perspiration-soaked butler came after them and replied, “Sir, I tried to intercept them, but they refuse to listen to me...”

What accompanied his words was Sue walking in from behind the policemen. She pointed at Karl and shouted, "Officer, that's him! He is a murderer! He even escaped from prison and stole your car!" Karl:"??"

Karl was still holding the bowl of dumplings that Tanya had prepared for him when the policemen surrounded him. The officer at the front looked at him warily and asked, "Who are

you?"

Karl neatened his uniform, waved, and replied, "One of you, obviously!"

Sue immediately yelled, "You mustn't believe him, officer! His affairs were all over the news just some time ago! Quick, arrest him! He had already escaped from jail once to attend his daughter's wedding!"

Someone had filmed Karl's escape from prison to attend the wedding the other time. The video had made it to the news, making him a household name in New York.

Therefore, the police officers had also heard a little about it. They looked at Karl in surprise.

Karl: "..."

He put down the bowl of dumplings, sighed, and then took out his ID from his pocket and threw it to the leading police officer from a distance.

The man flipped open the ID. Upon seeing the badge number on it, he opened up the system and keyed in his information. Karl's profile appeared at once. When he saw the words "Went undercover for 25 years. Returned to the team on XX day of XX month of XX year" among other things, he was filled with awe and respect at once. Sue was still sneering at them. "Tanya, you are too much! Hurry up and persuade your father to surrender! Don't drag the Smiths into this! You mustn't be so selfish! Now that you have become known as a murderer's daughter, it's already very hard for you to socialize in New York. You'll be breaking the law if you continue to shelter a criminal! Even if you must break the law to help your father, how can you drag the Smiths? You—".

was

Sue was very afraid of Karl, so she was hiding behind the leading policeman as she spoke. While she was speaking, though, she saw the policeman suddenly straightening his back. Then, he saluted Karl!

After that, with a wave from him, the other SWAT officers also immediately stood straight and put away their weapons. Then, the leading policeman walked up to Karl and respectfully returned his ID. "Thank you for your hard work!"

Sue: "??"

Karl waved him off. "Not at all."

After Karl put away his credentials, just as the policemen were about to leave, he suddenly said, "There are costs for you guys to respond to a call like this, right?"

Of course.

It took time for everyone to gather at the training ground, collect their equipment, and set off.

Before the leader could reply, Karl looked at Sue again and said, "You can't just respond to a call for nothing. Why not take this woman who made the false police report back with you and educate her?"

"Yes, sir!"

Karl was a retiree of the special department. Morris had even given him several medals. All the contributions he had made were all apparent on his clothes in the form of medals.

Thus, his position was much higher than the other officers'.

Upon hearing what Karl said, the officers immediately held Sue down. Dumbfounded, Sue shouted, "No! I'm not...! I didn't...! What is going on? I don't know anything at all! ..."

It was just a shame that they couldn't hear the rest of what she said as the group of policemen was very efficient. They took her with them straightaway.

After they left, Karl looked at Ian. "The Smiths suck. How come random people just waltz in so casually?"

The butler came in at this point.

To be honest, the butler had already received news of the police officers' impending arrival before they had even arrived. He had specially asked Joel whether he should let them in or

not.

The Smith Manor wasn't a place that they could enter just because they wanted to!

Joel had agreed to it at that time and instructed the Smiths' bodyguards not to get into a conflict with them.

However, Ian and Joel couldn't be bothered to explain.

After mocking them about it, Karl took his bowl of dumplings and started digging in. He even said unceremoniously, "Get a room ready for

me."

Ian looked at him frostily. "Are you even planning to take up permanent residence here?"

"Of course."

Karl said, "I am now employed, so I will have to work in New York from now on. What, are you guys going to drive me away? If so, then I'll be taking both my daughter and granddaughter with me." Ian curled his lips disdainfully. "Would I be afraid of you? I just think that it's too pitiful for you to live all by yourself! Fine, fine, stay here if that's what you want!"

Chapter 544 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

Johnson was dumbfounded when he heard this.

The forensic doctor went back into the ward and continued to observe Terry's condition.

Johnson stood outside. Then, he suddenly turned and headed outside. When he was about to go down the stairs, he saw Lily supporting Quentin as he walked about in the corridor.

Shockingly enough, Quentin, whose body had been limp all over, could already walk a great distance without any help or stops.

Lily was even giving him compliments. She said, "Nice! Your recovery is progressing so fast!"

Quentin explained, "Yeah, I can feel my body repairing itself bit by bit every day. I can feel the bones growing, it's as if something is bubbling inside me... It's amazing! I'd always known that Nora's medical skills were amazing, but I didn't expect them to be this good!"

Lily also nodded. "I finally understand why people are chasing after the gene serum. It's simply too amazing!"

Johnson kept walking downstairs as he listened to their conversation.

He lit up a cigarette downstairs in the hospital and started smoking, his emotions becoming more and more irritable.

He extinguished the cigarette butt and tossed it into the trash can. Only then did he get into his car and make his way to the special department.

As soon as he stepped inside the special department, everyone there gathered around him. They looked at him and asked, "Captain Johnson, what happened to Captain Ford? Did he really violate the regulations?"

"Captain Johnson, shouldn't Mark be released by now?" The attitude of the people in the department towards Johnson had clearly become a lot more enthusiastic than before, all just because Morris hadn't immediately taken revenge for Janson when the accident happened. This had made everyone unhappy with him.

Johnson smiled and replied, "He's fine, they are just trying to thoroughly investigate what had happened. All of you are also aware that Captain Ford's way of doing things is too non-compliant with the rules. Sigh! Alright, let's just free Mark for now! Also, you all shouldn't be gathering here. Go and do what you're supposed to be doing!" Everyone nodded.

They wanted to say more, but Johnson had already entered his office. He took out another cigarette and started to smoke. He was still waiting-waiting for further news from the hospital about Terry's condition. Brain damage could lead to many different scenarios. He couldn't take any risks yet!

After some time, it gradually turned dark outside.

Someone suddenly pushed open the door to Johnson's office. An excited Mark rushed in and said, "Johnson, I think Karl is about to be convicted of his crimes!"

Johnson was surprised. "What do you mean?"

Mark replied, "Janson just contacted me and said that Terry opened his eyes today! He obviously wanted to say something, but because he couldn't control his body yet, he couldn't speak. Janson also said that Terry will be able to speak after another day's time. When that happens, we will have a testimony! Let's see what Karl has to say after that!"

Panic entered Johnson's eyes, but he nevertheless feigned surprise and said, "Really? That's great!"

After Mark reported the "good news", he left the office.

Johnson stayed in the office for a while more. He suddenly extinguished the cigarette. A sharp look flashed in his eyes. After that, he went out and called Mark over.

He instructed, "Interrogate Karl overnight and try your best to get him to confess to his crimes! This will be a gift for Terry once he wakes up!"

A fierce look appeared in Mark's eyes. "Don't worry, I will definitely get you a satisfactory outcome!"

Johnson nodded. "I'll head to the hospital and watch over Terry, and strive to get a statement from him! This way, we'll be able to have Karl convicted as quickly as possible!"

"Yes, sir."

Johnson then went out and drove off. However, he did not go to the hospital. He stopped by a pharmacy and bought some drugs capable of instantly suffocating someone...

When Johnson arrived at the hospital, he found Janson asleep outside Terry's ward.

He looked around vigilantly.

As a professional with many years of experience in the industry, he had been suspecting all this time that all of this was just a trap that Morris and Nora were trying to lure him into.

Even though the two of them had been taken away by the inspection unit, Johnson did not let his guard down in the least.

He had always been a perceptive, paranoid, and meticulous person. Otherwise, he would not have become Morris' mentor back then.

His rash, irritable, and upright personality on the surface was all just a disguise to establish a sense of harmlessness to the leaders above, so that he would be promoted quickly.

As facts had proven, he had indeed succeeded.

That act of his had deceived a lot of people. All of them had let their guard down around him. In fact, the people involved in innumerable workplace traps back then had all underestimated him because of his disguised carelessness, allowing him to make comebacks and turn defeat into victory.

Thus, even at this moment, Johnson's first reaction was not to enter the ward in a hurry and kill Terry, but to observe the surroundings.

With his years of experience and surprisingly sharp intuition, he made sure that there wasn't anyone watching him in the surroundings and that he wasn't being plotted against by anyone. At last, he lightly pushed open the door to the ward and went in.

In the ward, Terry was lying on the bed. He had lost a lot of weight due to his coma over the past few days. His head was wrapped in white gauze, and he was unconscious, his eyes closed.

The first thing Johnson did was inspect the ward. Even after confirming that there weren't any surveillance cameras there, he did not immediately inject the toxic chemicals into Terry. Instead, he observed his vitals.

His heart rate was maintained at a little past sixty and was very stable. Although it was a little slower than normal, it was still considered healthy.

The other numbers were also indeed very good, which indicated that Terry was alive and recovering

The gene serum was indeed impressive.

With that in mind, Terry avoided all the angles that might allow one to photograph him, took out the deadly chemicals from his pocket, and injected them right into Terry.

He moved smoothly in one go without any hesitation whatsoever, fully exhibiting the competency of a professional.

When he was done, he took a step back. Shortly after, the monitor emitted a sharp beep. He gave Janson a push before he even woke up. Then, he shouted, "Janson, quick, come over and take a look! What's the matter with Terry?"

Janson opened his eyes in a daze. Upon hearing the warning alarm from the monitor, blood drained from his face. The hospital staff had also rushed over by then. Unfortunately, the heart rate monitor was only showing a straight line.

Terry was dead.

He had died a day after being injected with the gene serum. The cause of death was cardiac arrest, which seemed like a heart attack, yet also seemed like it was caused by the gene serum.

His body was taken away by the people from the inspection unit. Janson was extremely dispirited. Never would he have thought things would turn out like this. Quentin was obviously still well and alive in the ward next door... When news of the incident reached the special department, most of the colleagues felt their hearts sinking.

Johnson quickly returned to the department to counsel everyone. He sighed and said, "The gene serum was nothing good right from the start. Most people have lost their lives after being injected with it. I was already opposed to the idea back when Nora wanted to use it to treat Terry, but they simply refused to listen... And Morris, too. I really don't know how Nora managed to brainwash him so badly that he actually trusts her so much and goes along with her ridiculous actions!"

The others also sighed.

Janson stared at Johnson.

He had a suspicion in his heart, but he didn't know whether he should trust Johnson or not. Seemingly sensing his hostility, Johnson walked up to him and said, "Janson, you now understand why I tipped off the inspection unit, right? I really did it for Terry! The gene serum cannot be counted on at all! God knows how much Terry must have suffered during the past few days! I wonder if he could feel any pain when he was unconscious..."

As Johnson spoke, Janson's eyes reddened.

Johnson sighed and said, "For all his life, Terry had been at odds with the people behind the gene serum. I never expected that he would still have to suffer such torture before his death. Janson, can you understand my good intentions?"

Janson suddenly clenched his fists. Nevertheless, he replied sensibly, "Nora only used the gene serum in order to save my father's life, even though it failed in the end... The real murderer is Karl Moore!"

He said, "I request that we close the case and convict Karl as soon as possible!"

Johnson shook his head and sighed. After a while, he said, "The special department has the right to convict a criminal of their crimes, but the problem is that only the acting director has the right to do that! Now that Morris has been taken away by the inspection unit, no one in the department has the right to do that anymore!"

He frowned at once and said, "I wonder when the investigation into Morris will be completed. Also, when will the new acting director be assigned?"

The moment he said that, Janson was slightly taken aback.

He, who was still in the throes of pain from losing his father, got the vague feeling that Johnson was bringing up the matter because he wanted to fight for power. But before he could say anything, Mark, who was next to him, said angrily, "That's easy! We can jointly propose to remove Captain Ford from his post and then support Captain Johnson as the acting director in the interim! When that happens, you will be able to convict Karl of his crimes!"

Johnson frowned when he heard what he said. "That's... not quite a good idea, is it? Although Morris has done something muddleheaded, it was Nora who had deceived him..."

Mark immediately gritted his teeth and said, "Captain Ford has indeed become muddleheaded! The way he looks at Nora isn't right. For so many years, he has always been firm and impartial, but how many outlandish things has he done for Nora? All I did was interrogate Karl for a short while the other time, yet he actually locked me up!"

Mark and Janson were best buddies. He often went over to their place for meals. As his senior, Terry had also taught him a lot, and he had benefited a lot from his teachings.

That was why Mark was so worked up. He didn't even wait for Johnson to speak and immediately said, "A lot of people in the department think so too. Just wait for it, Captain Johnson, I'll take care of this!"

After speaking, Mark ran off.

Janson looked at him from the back, his eyes were all red.

A day later, the inspection unit came to the special department, planning to investigate the incident about Terry and also to announce the final outcome. As the incident had blown up a great deal in the special department, and also because Morris had gone against everyone's will to protect Karl, they had decided to hold a huge conference to resolve the matter.

Seeing everything going smoothly, Johnson finally relaxed. He felt that things were undoubtedly going very smoothly and there wouldn't be any unexpected issues.

Karl's case had already been reported to the organization. Many people knew about this matter, and it attracted wide attention. Of course, this was still Captain Johnson's doing

Morris was powerful and had accumulated a lot of connections over the years. After the incident, many people had spoken up for him and put pressure on the inspection unit. The inspection unit had originally planned to let Morris be released early, but with Old Terry's death along with Captain Johnson's actions, it was not appropriate to let him go. After all, if they were to forcefully let him go now, it would probably arouse the displeasure of the crowd.

The large conference room of the special department could accommodate a hundred people. All the staff members of the special department were present. Morris had broken the law and helped Nora give Old Terry the gene

serum. This matter was going to be judged today. After all, Morris's actions at that time were to save people, so the inspection unit did not know how to punish him.

At this moment, the meeting room was fully packed.

Most of the people inside were divided into two parts.

A portion of them was of Morris's loyal supporters. They had worked with him for many years and believed in him. They even said, "Captain Ford is also doing this to save people! If there are lives in danger, would we not prioritize saving people over violating some rules?"

The other group was led by Mark.

Janson was heartbroken and depressed, but Mark was indignant and retorted, "Then why didn't he convict Karl even after so long? He didn't even allow me to interrogate him! There must be something wrong!"

"That's right. Don't we know what gene serums are? They're harmful! They're poison! This is what we've been fighting against. Over the years, how many colleagues have been sacrificed to fight against the mysterious organization that makes this gene serum? In the end, you want to use this thing on one of our own? How ridiculous!"

The person supporting Morris said, "But Captain Ford did it to save people!" "But Old Terry is dead! He's not saved! The facts have proven that we were right! Captain Ford is too extreme. The special department has even become his one-man hall! Also, why is the trial against Karl Moore delayed? We clearly have all the evidence!"

As the crowd was in a heated argument, the door to the meeting room was pushed open. Then, accompanied by a staff member from the inspection unit, Morris strode into the meeting room.

The moment he entered, the entire conference room instantly became silent.

Everyone looked at him.

As he had been detained for two days, a black beard had appeared on Morris's chin. At this moment, he looked more like a mature man.

His gaze was like an eagle as it swept across everyone present, causing them to shut their mouths.

Morris and a few people from the Ministry of Supervision sat on the stage and looked down. One of them then started speaking, "Alright, now the special department is divided into two factions regarding Morris's situation. One half thinks that Captain Ford has been negligent in his work. As long as he apologizes to Janson, this matter will be over. The other half thinks that Captain Ford has used illegal drugs from the special department recklessly and seriously violated the law. He should be dismissed from his post till further investigation! Now, we want to ask the public's opinion!"

As soon as he said this, the two sides started arguing again.

Their words were the same as earlier.

Looking at the heated discussion, Captain Johnson suddenly said, "Um, I'll say something. Everyone, please listen to me."

He sighed and said, "I was the one who brought Morris into this industry. Now that I'm going to judge him, I really can't bear it. But there's nothing I can do. He has done something wrong and made some bad judgments! If anyone gets hurt in the future and says that the gene serum can be used to save lives, will he break the law and take it out again? We have to firmly put an end to such things! Therefore, in this situation, I suggest reducing the punishment for Morris. A dismissal is too serious. We should let him work from the bottom again and punish him with three months of salary cut as a show of service. I wonder if anyone has any objections?"

This kind of neutralized opinion instantly shook the people below.

Those who originally thought that Morris should be punished but still had some feelings for him and could not bear to remove him from the Investigation Committee immediately nodded.

Those who were originally on Morris's side also felt that this plan was reasonable...

For a moment, this proposal from Captain Johnson received the agreement of most people!

Mark stood up as well. "To be honest, Captain Ford has indeed worked hard and provided meritorious service all these years. I think it's too big of a punishment for him to be dismissed. I can't bear for Captain Morris to leave either. I think what Captain Johnson has said can be done! If he starts from the bottom again, I believe Captain Ford will be able to rely on his contributions to return to this position quickly!"

Everyone nodded. "Yes."

When Captain Johnson heard this, he was very satisfied.

He was doing this on purpose!

Morris had too many connections and too deep of a background. He could not possibly slap Morris to death. He could only take a step back and let him resign. Then, the chair of the Special Case Department Head would be his now!

This was his goal.

Seeing that everyone below had agreed, the people from the inspection unit then looked at Morris. "Captain Ford, do you have any objections to this punishment?"

With that, everyone looked at Morris.

Morris lowered his eyes. After a moment, he suddenly looked up and said slowly, "Yes."

Everyone fell silent again.

Captain Johnson frowned. "Morris, this punishment is already very light. You knew the rules and violated them, so you have to pay the price. People can't just be forgiven when they've done something wrong!"

"You're right."

Morris laughed coldly and suddenly stood up. "It's very hard to cover up when you've done something wrong. What about a murderer? Compared to my mistake, isn't your mistake more serious?"

These words made Captain Johnson's pupils shrink. He sneered and said, "Morris, Karl keeps saying that I killed Old Terry, but do you really trust him

over me? You've really disappointed me. Do you have any evidence to say that I have killed someone?"

"Of course."

Morris said slowly, "Not only do I have evidence, but I also have a witness!"

With that, he looked at the door. He was clearly here to be judged, but he turned the tables and said, "Come in."

Accompanying this sentence, Nora strode in lazily and yawned, pushing a wheelchair along.

Her face was filled with impatience as if she had not slept enough. Her expression was not very good.

However, no one noticed that at the moment. Everyone's attention was on the person in the wheelchair.

It was Old Terry.

When Old Terry appeared on the scene, the entire audience was shocked.

Janson stood up in shock and looked at Old Terry in disbelief.

Why was his father here?

He should be in the hospital's mortuary. While Janson was so shocked, Captain Johnson's heart was already in turmoil!

Old Terry... He was clearly dead!

He couldn't be alive after he had drugged him.

He swallowed hard and looked at Old Terry in horror. The person who had appeared there was like a demon! A demon that had climbed out of hell.

Before Captain Johnson could speak, Janson's eyes were already red. He took a step forward. "Dad, you're still alive?"

Old Terry's head was wrapped in gauze. The gauze on his head covered half his head, and the other half was horribly swollen. His voice seemed to be

blocked by something in his throat. It was very hoarse, and it was very uncomfortable to hear.

He slowly said, "I'm not dead, I'm still alive."

It was really him!

Everyone present widened their eyes. Why was he still alive?

Old Terry's next answer puzzled everyone. "The gene serum can even restore brain cells. How could I have died?"

Captain Johnson swallowed.

He thought that he could rest easy after seeing Old Terry die with his own eyes. However, he did not expect him to be alive! Had the gene serum cured the poison he had injected?

How could... this be?!

Thus, in the end, even if he was meticulous, he had still lost to fate!

"Uncle Terry, it's great that you're still alive!" Mark's feelings were purer than others. It was also easier for him to recover from his daze. He rushed to Old Terry and said with red eyes, "Tell everyone now who shot you?!"

With that, he complained aggrievedly, "Karl has been arrested, but he refused to confess. Captain Ford actually said that he felt aggrieved. He even accused Captain Johnson of killing you. How is this possible... You're awake now, tell everyone who shot you that day!"

Mark glared at Morris. Before Old Terry could speak, he said, "Captain Ford, if Old Terry personally testifies, you can use it as absolute evidence, right? If you still think the evidence is insufficient, we won't accept it if you don't punish Karl Moore!"

"Right, we can't accept this!"

Behind Mark, many hot-blooded youths from the special department shouted.

Morris's gaze was sharp. Despite being criticized and questioned by so many former companions, he said calmly, "Let Old Terry speak first!"

Everyone looked at Old Terry.

Mark even walked to Old Terry. “Uncle Terry, hurry up and speak. Karl framed Captain Johnson and Captain Ford believed Karl’s words. Quickly clear Captain Johnson’s name!”

Captain Johnson, who was shielded behind him, had a livid expression, his eyes flickering.

He knew that he was completely finished this time.

Old Terry coughed a few times. It seemed like even his cough was very uncomfortable. He even touched his head and looked at Captain Johnson. “Old Johnson, I had already woken up yesterday. I didn’t come yesterday was because I couldn’t figure out why you had shot me?”

With that, the entire place fell silent

Everyone seemed baffled by this sentence, but they also seemed to understand it. Then, they suddenly looked at Captain Johnson.

Janson was the first to react. He shouted at Captain Johnson, “Uncle Johnson, it was you who shot my father? You! But why... Why did you try to kill my father?!”

Captain Johnson narrowed his eyes and refused to admit it. “Old Terry, are you confused? I think you’re just confused. How could I try to kill you? Have you been bewitched?”

With that, the people around looked at Old Terry.

The people in the special department were all passionate youths.

In order to carry out their mission, they had sacrificed countless people and many comrades. Therefore, the camaraderie between them was comparable to that of real brothers.

Captain Johnson was their role model whom they looked up to.

Many young people were comforted by Captain Johnson when they felt lost in life.

Therefore, after the incident, everyone would definitely choose to trust their leaders and comrades!

Even at this moment, everyone trusted Captain Johnson more.

Mark shouted, "Uncle Terry, what are you talking about?"

Old Terry sighed and continued, "Old Johnson, I understand now. Back then, Karl was my informant. When I retired, I transferred him to you. At that time, I was not in good health. I stayed in the hospital for half a month and was even in a coma. Before I fainted, I gave you his contact details and asked you to tell him that I'd retired him from undercover duty. You didn't tell him, did you?"

Captain Johnson pursed his lips. "Old Terry, I don't know what you're talking about!"

Old Terry sighed again. "You know, I have evidence that he's an undercover agent! Old Johnson, I've never doubted you. Over the years, you've used the intelligence he provided to solve many cases. Don't you know how you got from a lowly beat cop to where you are today? How could you still treat him like this?! The reason you killed me and framed him was because of that charity fund, right?"

When Captain Johnson heard Old Terry's last sentence, he knew that he could not hide it anymore! Old Terry said slowly, "Your son is overseas. He bought a sports car worth \$5,000,000. Where did this money come from?"

Captain Johnson stammered, "How... how would I know? He didn't buy a sports car at all. What nonsense are you talking about?"

Old Terry's voice was very hoarse, and his words were sharp and unpleasant. "We have all the records of whether he bought it or not. I can get the bank to send them over right now. The money your son spent buying a car and a house outside are all from the charity foundation Karl gave you, right?"

Captain Johnson was flustered. "You..."

"Back then, when you contacted him with the information I gave you, you did not reveal your identity. He thought that you were me, so he told you that he wanted to give New York a charity. Then, when he talked about money, you were tempted, right? You pretended to be me because Karl only trusted me!

You took the money and put it all in your own pocket! We've already investigated your bank accounts. Old Johnson, you can't deny it!"

When Captain Johnson heard these words, he knew that he had to admit it no matter how much he lied.

Morris shouted, "Captain Johnson, aren't you going to confess now?"

Captain Johnson looked at him suddenly and shouted, "Even if I confess, you can't escape from what you've done with the gene serum!"

Captain Johnson hated Morris to the core.

He was ashamed to face Old Terry. After all, he was the one who had shot him.

Karl had given him a lot of money over the years.

Therefore, when he saw that Karl was captured by the special department, Johnson was afraid that he would expose his identity and lead the special department to investigate the fund.

Captain Johnson helped Karl escape because he wanted him to leave New York and be of use to him in the future.

Unfortunately, Karl had actually stayed for his daughter's wedding.

In order to prevent any accidents, Captain Johnson had gotten the sniper to shoot him at the wedding. He wanted to kill him so that there would be no risk.

Unfortunately, Nora had stirred things up again. After that, she had arrested Karl. Morris had watched Karl closely and made him unable to do anything

Karl had forced him to look for Old Terry. Helpless, he could only call Old Terry over.

However, no matter how much he calculated, he had missed Nora and Morris's persistence!

If Morris was not so persistent, he could have convicted Karl after Old Terry died or gotten someone to kill him. The matter could still be controlled.

Unfortunately, Morris was too protective of Karl!

And Nora, this little b*tch, actually developed some gene serum and saved Old Terry, who should have died!

It was all their fault, all their fault!

Captain Johnson knew that he had already been exposed. There was nothing else to say. He shouted angrily, “And you, Nora. I asked you to come to the special department to catch the mysterious organization, not to develop the gene serum. But what have you done? Do you think you’re much better than me? I just want money, but you’re in cahoots with the people from the mysterious organization. What you do is no different from the mysterious organization!”

Morris looked at him and sighed deeply. “Captain Johnson, what we’re talking about now is your murder charge.” Captain Johnson sneered and said, “I’m at most considered to have attempted murder! But your and Nora’s crimes are far too serious. I just want to ask you something. If gene serum can treat illnesses and save lives, and can even bring people back to life, then what is the meaning of the years of work we have done targeting the mysterious organization?! This research they’ve done is beneficial to humans!” “Your actions make all our actions seem so ridiculous! Is the birth of this drug supposed to make us hurry up and submit to the mysterious organization?” “And you, Old Terry. Don’t look at me like that. You’re stupid. You don’t know how to earn money. Is it wrong for me to make money? I’ve risked my life so many times. On what basis can I not live as well as others? Those people from wealthy families can casually earn money, live in mansions, and drive good cars. But what about us?”

He looked around. “Our existence is a joke! This drug developed by the mysterious organization that we’ve been trying so hard to catch has become your life-saving straw!”

“Morris, I attempted murder. You’re not any better off than me. It was you who made the special department dispensable!” If the drugs in the mysterious organization could really save lives, should the mysterious organization really be outlawed?

This question appeared in the hearts of many members of the special department at the same time.

They had fought for so many years and sacrificed so many companions. What was the reason? Was the justice they insisted on even right?

Just as everyone was confused, they suddenly heard a scoff. “Old Johnson, in that case, you admit to your crimes?”

Captain Johnson narrowed his eyes. “Yes, I confess. I attempted murder and choose to surrender. My sentence will be lighter!”

“But regarding Morris, I strongly urge the Ministry of Supervision to deal with him seriously! He covers the sky with one hand in the special department and is playing a good role in reversing the situation! Heh, his thoughts are evil and his heart is already leaning towards the mysterious organization!”

As soon as Captain Johnson finished speaking, he saw Old Terry suddenly laugh softly. That laughter was clear and was no longer as hoarse as before.

Captain Johnson was stunned.

Everyone was stunned and looked at Old Terry in disbelief.

Old Terry reached out and pulled at the skin at the chin, tearing off a piece to reveal Brenda’s stunning face!

This time, no one could speak.

This sudden change in attitude caught everyone off guard.

After tearing off the fake skin on her face, Brenda stood up and took off the wig. Her beautiful hair fell down and she stood there beautifully in her hospital gown. “Captain Johnson, I’m sorry to inform you that Old Terry is really dead. You didn’t commit attempted murder. You have committed a real murder!”

Captain Johnson widened his eyes. He took a step back and looked at Brenda before looking at Morris and Nora again...

At this moment, someone instantly understood something... This group of people had no evidence of him killing anyone. Even the transfer record was forged carefully. It was difficult for anyone to notice.

When he killed Old Terry, he had done it flawlessly!

Morris had no evidence to prove Karl’s innocence. After all, he had the motive to kill Old Terry. Unless Old Terry said it himself and testified as a witness.

However, Old Terry was already on his last breath at the time. He could not have lived!

Therefore, that gene serum was not so magical at all. It only healed Quentin's injuries, but it could not revive the dead!

Old Terry was really dead!

However, this group of people had put on a show for him. It was a miracle that Quentin's bones had recovered. Johnson had seen a medical miracle with his own eyes, so he believed that Old Terry could be treated.

The moment Old Terry appeared, he did not doubt his authenticity.

However, he had forgotten what Brenda was best at-Disguise!

When Captain Johnson figured this out, the people from the inspection unit said, "Captain Johnson, you've already admitted yourself that you killed Old Terry. The motive and evidence are enough! What else do you have to say?!"

What else could he say?

Nothing!

Captain Johnson knew that it was useless to say anything now. He looked at Morris and Nora angrily. "I want to say that these two people have violated the rules of the special department and used the gene serum to treat Quentin without permission. This is all Nora's private use of public power!"

Even if he died, he had to make Morris and Nora suffer along!

However, as soon as he finished speaking, he saw Nora, who was behind Brenda, yawn heavily. Then, she said casually, "Gene serum? Are you talking about this?"

She casually picked up an iron box and opened it. There were rows of transparent glass bottles inside.

Nora slowly curved her lips. "These are just vitamins."

Nora was very focused when she worked. When she was overseas, she would often work for a few days and nights in a row. After that, she would

sleep for a very long time. Therefore, she had specially made a vitamin solution to prevent hypoglycemia in her sleep.

Lily only needed to inject this solution into her body. She did not need to wake up herself. She could sleep for 72 hours, or even more.

Captain Johnson was stunned. “How... how is this possible?” Nora raised her eyebrows. Because she had not slept enough, her temper was a little grumpy as she spoke impatiently in a hoarse voice, “The inspection unit has already collected the needles and syringes I used on Old Terry that day. They have checked the composition inside and confirmed that it is indeed a vitamin solution. Why do you think Captain Ford and I were let out?”

They had been acquitted!

Furthermore, the Inspection unit had cooperated with them and put on a show!

As for the medicine used on Quentin...

The gene serum Nora had pretended to inject was all a cover to fool Janson into convincing Captain Johnson.

The drug actually used for Quentin’s treatment was administered later on!

She did not sleep for three days and three nights to synthesize an excellent drug for the recovery of his bones using the medical skills given by her master, Dr. Zabe. This medicine was the Bone Adhesion Balm.

Quentin was finally able to stand up because of that drug. The drug would not take effect that fast, but to help her convince Captain Johnson, Quentin had stood up forcefully and walked back and forth.

Now, he was lying on the bed again. He had been injured for a hundred days, not to mention that his bones had been rejoined. He had to recuperate well later on.

As for Old Terry...

Since his temples had exploded, there was no way to save him and he had died on the very same day. However, how and when to tell the others about his death was all planned by Nora. At this point, the truth was revealed.

Captain Johnson was arrested and taken away by the Inspection unit. What awaited him next was trial and execution. The death penalty was unavoidable. After all, his crime was too serious.

Janson realized that his father had really passed away and started crying. Mark and the others felt as if their worlds had collapsed.

Just as everyone was feeling mixed emotions, Ruth suddenly rushed out.

Her arm was still wrapped in bandages and her charming face was filled with fear. She said, "Officers, I want to report something!"

When she said this, the people from the Inspection unit looked at her.

Ruth said, "Captain Johnson had asked me to develop a plan to interrogate Karl. I found it very strange at the time, so I kept delaying the plans. Now, I understand. Fortunately, I trusted Captain Ford. So that's how it is! Anyway, I want to report something!"

The people from the Inspection unit and the surrounding special departments all looked at her.

Ruth said righteously, "When I went to his room to find some information, I realized that his computer was switched on. He had logged onto an external network. I checked his records and realized that Captain Johnson had posted a message on a foreign underworld forum. He said that Nora had a gene serum, he was trying to attract overseas organizations to fight for it. I think the reason he did that was also to stop Old Terry's treatment."

Her words made the expressions of the people change drastically.

Captain Johnson had already committed a heinous crime by killing people for money. However, they did not expect him to be in contact with foreign underworld? They definitely needed to investigate if he was a spy! The officer from the Inspection unit said, "Comrade Ruth, the intelligence you have provided is very important. We will thoroughly investigate the matter! If any of you people have any other information for us, you have to tell it in time!"

Ruth's eyes were red as she lowered her head. "Although I grew up overseas and was recommended by Captain Johnson to join the special department, I knew this place was my home when I came to New York. I didn't expect Captain Johnson to be such a vile person..."

The people from the Inspection unit could only comfort her. "It's okay. This has nothing to do with you." Ruth sighed. "I know it has nothing to do with me, but it was Captain Johnson who recommended me to the special department. This..."

The people from the Ministry of Supervision immediately calmed her down. "It's okay. The special department welcomes all talented people! Besides, you've done a good job by reporting Captain Johnson!"

Ruth heaved a sigh of relief.

This was the reason she had rushed out to snitch against Captain Johnson.

She had been recommended by Captain Johnson. If he left, she was afraid that the department would chase her away.

She hurriedly looked at Morris and said, "Captain Ford, Black Cat and I have already sorted out the interrogation plan. If we interrogate them accordingly, I guarantee that they will all speak!"

Morris stared at Ruth.

Morris was a person who cared about principles when he did things. Although Ruth had always been against Nora in the past, she had never done anything against his principles.

Moreover, Captain Johnson had just been arrested. If he turned around and dealt with Ruth, he would leave a bad impression on the other people in the special department, making them feel uneasy.

At the thought of this, Morris said, "Work hard. Don't spend so much time on those trivial matters in the future!"

Ruth blushed and she said, "Yes Sir!"

Morris then looked to the side and wanted to speak to Nora, but he saw Nora and Brenda already walking out when he turned his head.

Nora was so tired that she did not want to speak, but she still looked at Brenda in confusion. "You are quite good at disguises. Your acting was very realistic." Brenda said, "Of course. I'm made use of my makeup and forgery techniques to the limit!" Nora was curious. "Can you impersonate anyone?"

Brenda said, “No, it would be very difficult to impersonate you. After all, your head is smaller than mine. I would prefer someone with a big head. I just need to add some skin and stuff like that. If I had to impersonate you... Do you think I can peel off a layer of skin?”

The two of them walked along busy chatting. Just as they left the door, they saw Justin standing in the parking lot. His tall and slender figure was noticeable at a glance.

He was leaning against the car with his legs crossed. When he saw the two of them, he immediately stood up and walked toward them.

Brenda clicked her tongue twice and said in a lazy and charming tone, “Justin, you were married to your job when you weren’t with Nora in the past. Now that you have Nora, have you thrown your job away in some cold corner?”

Justin ignored her.

Instead, he opened the car door and said to Nora, “Let’s go home and catch up on your sleep.”

Nora nodded and got into the car.

Justin walked to the other side and was about to get into the car when Ruth suddenly came running out of the special department. When she saw him, her eyes instantly lit up and she hurried over. “Mr. Hunt, I really have something to tell you!”

Justin did not even look at her and got into the car.

Ruth had no choice but to bite her lips and shout, “It’s about the child! You’ll regret it if you don’t listen!”

About the child?

Justin’s footsteps paused as his long and cold eyes looked at her. However, he only glanced at her casually before getting into the car.

He had nothing to say to Ruth about the child.

The car started and Ruth chased after it. Just as she was about to reach the car, Lawrence suddenly came out and grabbed her. “Miss Ruth, let’s talk!”

When Ruth saw that it was him again, she bit her lip in anger and said, “I really have something important to discuss with Mr. Hunt! It’s about the child! His son!”

Lawrence lowered his eyes. “What’s wrong with Pete? Tell me first.”

Ruth’s eyes were firm as she slowly said, “No, I must discuss this with Mr. Hunt face to face. I won’t say anything until I see him!”

The corners of Lawrence’s mouth twitched. “This trick again. Are you going to ask him out on a date when you see him? Miss Ruth, I’ve already seen this trick of yours a million times. I advise you to behave yourself! Mr. Hunt has a fiancée! It’s Miss Smith, do you understand?”

He pursed his lips and looked at Ruth up and down. “Please take a good look at yourself. What about you compares to Miss Smith? Your face? Your figure? Or your talent? Tsk! Look in the mirror if you have the time!”

Lawrence got into the car and left behind Justin.

Ruth was left alone in embarrassment.

She clenched her fists tightly and took a deep breath after a moment. “Just wait and see! I’ll expose the person you like sooner or later and make her fall from grace!!”

The limousine was driving back to the Smiths.

Justin personally drove so Nora could rest without any hindrance. He drove the car so smoothly not even a little vibration could be felt.

SU

Nora lay on the big bed on the backseat and slept with her eyes closed.

She had only fallen asleep when she suddenly sat up.

She hesitated for a moment. “Did we forget something?”

Justin looked at her. “What can I forget? Just go to sleep.”

Nora’s face was pale and listless. Her almond-shaped eyes were lowered and she could barely open them. When she heard Justin’s words, she thought that

it was probably nothing serious, so she lay down again. This time, she really fell into a deep sleep.

Not long after their car left, Karl was released from the special department.

Everyone in the special department stared at him.

Janson had gone to settle Old Terry's funeral matters, so Mark represented him as he stood there. The moment Karl came out, he stood straight as a wall and saluted.

An undercover colleague was someone they should admire the most. However, under Captain Johnson's guidance, he had instead humiliated Karl several times over the past few days.

V

SU

At this moment, Mark really felt that he had been wrong. "Sir, I was wrong! Please hit me and vent your anger!"

Young officers were always hot-blooded. However, they could realize their mistakes and change. They did not always have bad intentions.

Karl looked at him and thought of his younger days...

He patted Mark's shoulder and said, "You did the right thing. Even if there's no evidence and you have doubts about the enemy, you must have complete faith in your comrades!"

Just as he himself had never doubted Old Terry all these years.

Even if such a thing had happened before, it should not have caused the people in the special department to have a crisis of distrust toward their comrades.

Mark's face turned even redder. "But Captain Johnson turned out to be like this. Can our comrades be trusted?"

"Yes!"

Karl replied affirmatively, "There are always exceptions. But those willing to give up everything for the people deserve respect." They could not let the people in the special department have a trust crisis because of Captain Johnson.

Mark nodded thoughtfully. At this moment, Morris held a uniform in his hand and walked to Karl with steel steps. He suddenly saluted Karl and handed him the uniform. "Karl, welcome home."

Welcome home.

These words made Karl's eyes turn red.

With trembling fingers, he slowly took the uniform and returned Morris's salute.

Then he turned and walked out.

Along the way, people from the special department kept looking at him. People saluted Karl one after another as he walked past them. With everyone's attention on him, Karl went out the door.

In the solemn and tragic atmosphere, Karl's voice suddenly came from outside the door. "Where's Nora? This heartless person. Did she not think of taking me home?! Do I have to take a taxi home?!"

Everyone was speechless.

Morris hurried over and arranged for a car from the special department to send him home.

At the Smiths.

After reaching the Smith Manor, Justin picked up Nora, who was in deep sleep, and took her inside.

The matter had been resolved, and Austin had not come to the country.

Ian was very satisfied. It was rare that he did not have a bad expression of Justin.

Justin went upstairs and gently placed Nora on the bed. Then, he heard the commotion downstairs.

His brows drew together tightly.

He went out and looked downstairs. He realized that it was Sue. At this moment, she was pointing at Tanya. “Tanya, your status is so awkward now! Your father killed a person and even killed a policeman! He’s simply too lawless!”

Tanya rolled her eyes and ignored her. However, just as she was about to go upstairs, Sue said, “You’re now the mistress of our family. It’s too embarrassing to have a murderer as a father! Look, so many invitation letters have been sent to my house. No one dares to invite you. Therefore, Joel, don’t you think I should be the one appearing as the mistress of the Smiths?”

Many people wanted to curry favor with the Smiths to do business. As the mistress, she could get many gifts from them.

Being the mistress of the Smiths was a very glorious thing.

Sue was using Tanya’s bad reputation to vie for this position!

She really courted death every day.

Joel lowered his eyes. “I won’t trouble you with that kind of thing.”

“How is it trouble? I’m also a member of the Smiths. Besides, Tanya’s status is too awkward now, and she’s not suitable to appear in public. Isn’t it my responsibility then?”

Almost as soon as she finished speaking, a police car stopped outside the villa with a screech.

The Smith manor was still some distance away from the gates.

Thus, when the police car stopped, the security guard hurriedly popped his head out the window and was badly frightened. “Are they here to arrest someone again?”

Puzzled, the butler went out and went up to the police car politely. Just as he was about to speak, the car window rolled down, revealing Karl’s face. He asked, “Is Tanya at home?”

The butler was taken aback. “Mrs. Smith has been home all along. Mr. Moore, have you... hijacked a police car?”

Had Karl broken out of jail and even stolen a police car?

Wasn't he a little too bold?

The butler's thoughts terrified him.

Upon hearing what he said, Karl broke into a grin. He even patted the steering wheel and asked, "Is this car dashing or what?" The butler: "..."

"C'mon, cut the crap and open the door! I'm going in to look for my daughter!" Following Karl's words, the butler swallowed. He ultimately didn't dare to stop Karl from entering, so he opened the gates.

The car swayed about as Karl drove carelessly on the driveway.

In the living room.

Tanya's eyes were lowered and she kept quiet.

With a cold look on his face, Joel said, "Grandaunt Sue, I don't find my wife's status awkward at all."

Sue curled her lips disdainfully and said, "You don't have to glorify her anymore. All of New York already knows by now that her father is a murderer. This has pretty much been cemented. We also have our own contacts that we can use to find out the information we want! Tanya is not invited to any of the events in the New York circle these days. If you don't believe me, then why don't you go out and have a look yourself? Think of all the invitations that the Smiths had received when Yvonne was still around. Who is going to send the Smiths any invitations now?"

She went on. "It's not just Tanya. Even Nora is also... What is a good girl like her doing being a forensic doctor? Doesn't she find it crass dealing with dead bodies every day? It's even taboo for many people, that's why they are not sending invitations to Nora anymore, either.

"But there are many things that require a woman to come forward and take care of. Take a look at the Smiths now, how many presentable women are there?"

"Besides, I'm here this time because of a huge transaction!"

Joel narrowed his eyes and looked at Sue.

Sue said, "There isn't any land available for purchase in New York lately, right? The real estate business is gradually failing. The part of our family's business in the real estate hasn't produced any profits this year! But I daresay that this project of mine is definitely the most profitable in the real estate industry!"

Joel immediately understood what project Sue was talking about.

He immediately cut her off and said, "The Smiths will not brood over certain businesses. The real estate industry is not doing well anymore. It was a wise choice that we pulled out in time!"

He didn't give Sue a chance to speak, but stood up and pushed her out instead. He said, "Grandaunt Sue, we have a lot to do. Why don't you go home for now?"

Tanya watched the two of them.

Joel had always been a wily little fox. Even if he was obviously unhappy about something, he would still keep a smile on his face. He maintained a smiley disposition all year round and then decimated his enemies behind their backs.

He seldom got angry on the surface back then.

But he was actually starting to get physical now. It must be because what Sue was about to say had something to do with her.

As soon as the thought formed, Sue said, "Joel, don't push me. Isn't it for the sake of letting the Smiths profit that I'm here to talk about the project today? Are you going to deprive the Smiths of such huge profits just to protect your wife?"

Sue rushed up to Tanya and said, "Do you know? There is a big project in New York that all the companies are bidding for right now. The Smiths could have easily fought for it; it's all because of you that we have let this project slip by us!"

Tanya frowned and looked at Joel.

Joel's voice became even colder. "Grandaunt Sue, don't force me into taking action against

you!”

Sue, however, lifted her chin and said, “Then why don’t you do it? But before you do, I still have to make this clear!”

She looked straight at Tanya and said, “This huge project was to build a courthouse on a plot of land in the suburbs! And since this building is so special, they require an engineering team with a crystal clear track record with the law! The Smiths have indeed never broken the law before even after being in business for so many years! But we now have a daughter-in-law with a murderer for a father! You’ve utterly ruined the Smiths’ reputation! We can’t bid on the project anymore just because of you!”

Tanya bit her lip when she heard this.

As for Joel, he immediately shouted, “Where’s the housekeeper?!”

Lucy entered the room and said, “I’m here.”

“Show Grand aunt Sue out!”

“Yes, sir.”

Lucy took a step forward as she spoke. She grabbed Sue’s hand right away and started to drag her toward the door.

Sue, however, sneered and said, “Joel, do you think this problem will just go away if you drive me out and stop me from talking? Even if I don’t say anything about it, both of you should know that it’s all because of her father that we have been barred from the project! Hah, we, the Smiths, have never so brazenly broken the law all these years, but we have totally embarrassed ourselves this time! Are you still going to defend a wife like that?” To be honest, building a courthouse didn’t bring much profit.

However, it was a representation of one’s corporate reputation in the country!

It was indeed extremely unsightly that the Smiths’ engineering team didn’t even qualify to bid on the project.

However...

Joel refuted her. “We may not be able to win the project even if we bid for it, anyway! How can you blame it all on Tanya?”

Sue sneered, “With what all the outsiders are saying, the Smiths have utterly embarrassed themselves, yet you are still defending her! Not only is a matriarch like her unable to do anything for the Smiths, but she’s even giving us a whole lot of trouble! Joel, I told you, I came here with a project! As long as you let me be the matriarch of the Smiths on the surface, I can convince the Department of Housing and Urban Development to give the Smiths a chance to participate in the bidding! Whether we make money or not doesn’t matter; what matters is earning back the reputation we have lost!”

Joel frowned. He was about to speak when police sirens came from the door.

Sue’s eyes lit up at once when she heard the police sirens. She pointed at Tanya and said excitedly, “Hear that? The police are here again! Have we become at constant loggerheads with the police? Tanya’s father must have gotten himself in trouble again, they’re here to arrest Tanya now!”

As soon as she said that, a wild and boorish voice came from the door. “Who dares to arrest my daughter?!”

Upon hearing this, the few of them looked over one after another and saw Karl striding in wearing a police uniform!

A shudder went through Sue when she heard his voice. Seeing that it was Karl walking in, Sue was reminded of the terror she had felt being dominated by him the last time, and her legs turned into jelly.

Karl was dressed in a police uniform, which covered all of his tattoos and made him look very righteous. It was just that there was no change to his simple and honest image.

As he entered, Karl grinned at Tanya and said, “I’m back.”

Tanya’s eyes reddened.

Joel put his arm around her shoulders. After greeting his daughter, Karl finally looked at Sue. Upon recognizing her, he frowned and said with displeasure, “You again?” Sue swallowed hard. “No, it’s not me!”

Karl: ?

Sue was so terrified that she didn’t dare to speak. Instead, she said to Tanya and Joel, “Um, I have something to do, so I’ll be going now!”

She hurried out after speaking, upon which she spotted the police car parked at the door.

Sue became even more scared and almost fell onto the ground. She got into the car and immediately told the chauffeur to quickly drive off. When they reached the gates, she saw the butler instructing his subordinates, "Quick, close the gates. If anyone comes and asks about Mr. Joel's in-laws, just tell them that you don't know anything!"

"Yes, sir!"

The butler sighed. "He even has the guts to steal a police car. Surely Mr. Moore didn't really break out of prison again, right?"

Sue became even more scared and she didn't dare to say any more. She immediately urged the chauffeur to hurry up and drive back home.

But when she got home, the more Sue thought about it, the more scared she became.

She said to Samuel, "People like Karl Moore are all devils who kill without even batting an eyelid. Do you think he will come to take revenge against me?"

Samuel was, surprisingly, relatively calm. He replied, "I know that family well. Although they seem cold and ruthless, they are reliable... As long as you don't provoke them, they won't do anything to you."

Samuel just found Ian an eyesore, that's why he was always going against him. However, he had never harbored any thoughts of harming the Smiths.

Sue, however, said, "But I have already made an agreement with the other party. They will give the Smiths a chance to bid for the project and I will give them money! This way, I would also become the matriarch of the Smiths. With that, won't all the Smiths' little opportunities to make money be ours in the future?"

Samuel curled his lips disdainfully. "Dream on. The matriarch of the Smiths? You sure dare to dream big. With how stingy Ian is, he has all the power in the family tightly in his grasp, okay? His word is absolute in for the Smiths! Joel was personally taught and groomed by him. Do you think he will ever make you the matriarch of the Smiths? Don't even think about it!"

Seeing that even Samuel wasn't cooperating with her, Sue got anxious. "Why are you being such a loser? Haven't you ever thought of improving our family's conditions?"

She walked back and forth in the room. Then, she went out. "No, this won't do. I'm calling the cops!"

Samuel was taken aback. "What are you going crazy for?"

Sue replied, "I am a good, law-abiding citizen. Now that someone like him has broken out of jail again, I have to inform the police about it! Even if it is not for money, I am afraid that he will come over in the middle of the night and murder me! There are murder cases everywhere these days. It's not like you haven't seen the news!"

Before Samuel could recover, Sue had already left.

The forty to fifty-year-old woman was a bit chubby but didn't look swollen. She merely looked a little well-fed. Her butt twisted from side to side as she got into the car and went straight to the nearest police station. The moment she entered, she immediately said, "Officer, I'd like to make a police report! A murderer has broken out of jail and is now hiding at the Smith Manor!"

At the Smiths.

Karl didn't have the time to bother with Sue after she fled. Instead, he asked, "What project is it? I can talk to them!"

He was now a hero in the special department. Morris definitely wouldn't reject him if he asked to give the relevant departments a heads-up.

Joel smiled and replied, "No, it's fine. You've only just returned, you should take a good bath and rest instead!"

The fact that Karl had returned in the uniform showed that what Nora had said was all correct. From the looks of it, Karl's identity must have been reinstated.

The obstacle standing in the way of the Smiths would go away even without him speaking with the relevant authorities.

Upon hearing what Joel said, Karl sniffed himself. Then, he scratched his head and looked at Tanya. "Do I smell? I've been taking baths every day in the special department!"

As he spoke, he even stretched his arm towards Tanya so that she could take a sniff as well.

Tanya: "..."

She pushed Karl's arm away and sighed. "There are dumplings in the kitchen. Do you want some?"

Karl's eyes lit up. "Yes!"

Tanya walked to the kitchen straight away.

The servant in the kitchen said, "What do you need, Ma'am? Let me do it!"

"No, it's fine," replied Tanya. Then, she took out the frozen dumplings from the refrigerator and put them in the pot.

Karl came over. The servant smiled and said, "Mrs. Smith made these dumplings herself. She didn't let us help at all! You're so blessed, Mr. Moore!"

The simple-looking Karl couldn't stop chuckling

Ian came downstairs at this time.

He could get out of the wheelchair and walk with crutches by now, and his recovery was going well. When he saw Karl, he huffily asked, "Old man, why are you in my house again?"

Karl craned his neck and replied, "I don't have a house in New York, so where my daughter is is my home!"

When Tanya saw Ian, she asked, "Dad, would you also like a plate of dumplings?".

Ever since Joel started calling him "Dad", Tanya had also changed her term of address for Ian.

But as soon as she called him "Dad", Karl became jealous. "Girl, why are you calling him Dad? He's not eating!"

Ian couldn't help but smile. The moment the smile formed, his good looks immediately revealed themselves. He had always been an attractive man. Now that he was keeping himself well-maintained, and his cheeks had become a bit fleshier, he looked a lot younger than before. His smile was very elegant. He said, "I'll have a plate."

Initially, he hadn't wanted to eat it, but just for the sake of annoying Karl, he would have a plate of dumplings, no matter what.

Karl said, "... My daughter made them for me! You are not allowed to eat any!"

Ian leaned on the crutches and sneered, "This is my house! Get out of here!"

While the two old men were arguing as if they were children, a group of police officers suddenly swarmed in through the doorway!

There were about ten officers. All of them were wearing bulletproof vests and had surrounded the living room. Ian frowned and asked, "What's going on?" The perspiration-soaked butler came after them and replied, "Sir, I tried to intercept them, but they refuse to listen to me..."

What accompanied his words was Sue walking in from behind the policemen. She pointed at Karl and shouted, "Officer, that's him! He is a murderer! He even escaped from prison and stole your car!" Karl:"??"

Karl was still holding the bowl of dumplings that Tanya had prepared for him when the policemen surrounded him. The officer at the front looked at him warily and asked, "Who are

you?"

Karl neatened his uniform, waved, and replied, "One of you, obviously!"

Sue immediately yelled, "You mustn't believe him, officer! His affairs were all over the news just some time ago! Quick, arrest him! He had already escaped from jail once to attend his daughter's wedding!"

Someone had filmed Karl's escape from prison to attend the wedding the other time. The video had made it to the news, making him a household name in New York.

Therefore, the police officers had also heard a little about it. They looked at Karl in surprise.

Karl: "..."

He put down the bowl of dumplings, sighed, and then took out his ID from his pocket and threw it to the leading police officer from a distance.

The man flipped open the ID. Upon seeing the badge number on it, he opened up the system and keyed in his information. Karl's profile appeared at once. When he saw the words "Went undercover for 25 years. Returned to the team on XX day of XX month of XX year" among other things, he was filled with awe and respect at once. Sue was still sneering at them. "Tanya, you are too much! Hurry up and persuade your father to surrender! Don't drag the Smiths into this! You mustn't be so selfish! Now that you have become known as a murderer's daughter, it's already very hard for you to socialize in New York. You'll be breaking the law if you continue to shelter a criminal! Even if you must break the law to help your father, how can you drag the Smiths? You—".

was

Sue was very afraid of Karl, so she was hiding behind the leading policeman as she spoke. While she was speaking, though, she saw the policeman suddenly straightening his back. Then, he saluted Karl!

After that, with a wave from him, the other SWAT officers also immediately stood straight and put away their weapons. Then, the leading policeman walked up to Karl and respectfully returned his ID. "Thank you for your hard work!"

Sue: "??"

Karl waved him off. "Not at all."

After Karl put away his credentials, just as the policemen were about to leave, he suddenly said, "There are costs for you guys to respond to a call like this, right?"

Of course.

It took time for everyone to gather at the training ground, collect their equipment, and set off.

Before the leader could reply, Karl looked at Sue again and said, "You can't just respond to a call for nothing. Why not take this woman who made the false police report back with you and educate her?"

"Yes, sir!"

Karl was a retiree of the special department. Morris had even given him several medals. All the contributions he had made were all apparent on his clothes in the form of medals.

Thus, his position was much higher than the other officers'.

Upon hearing what Karl said, the officers immediately held Sue down. Dumbfounded, Sue shouted, "No! I'm not...! I didn't...! What is going on? I don't know anything at all! ..."

It was just a shame that they couldn't hear the rest of what she said as the group of policemen was very efficient. They took her with them straightaway.

After they left, Karl looked at Ian. "The Smiths suck. How come random people just waltz in so casually?"

The butler came in at this point.

To be honest, the butler had already received news of the police officers' impending arrival before they had even arrived. He had specially asked Joel whether he should let them in or

not.

The Smith Manor wasn't a place that they could enter just because they wanted to!

Joel had agreed to it at that time and instructed the Smiths' bodyguards not to get into a conflict with them.

However, Ian and Joel couldn't be bothered to explain.

After mocking them about it, Karl took his bowl of dumplings and started digging in. He even said unceremoniously, "Get a room ready for

me."

Ian looked at him frostily. "Are you even planning to take up permanent residence here?"

"Of course."

Karl said, "I am now employed, so I will have to work in New York from now on. What, are you guys going to drive me away? If so, then I'll be taking both my daughter and granddaughter with me." Ian curled his lips disdainfully. "Would I be afraid of you? I just think that it's too pitiful for you to live all by yourself! Fine, fine, stay here if that's what you want!"

Chapter 545 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

Janson looked at him from the back, his eyes were all red.

A day later, the inspection unit came to the special department, planning to investigate the incident about Terry and also to announce the final outcome. As the incident had blown up a great deal in the special department, and also because Morris had gone against everyone's will to protect Karl, they had decided to hold a huge conference to resolve the matter.

Seeing everything going smoothly, Johnson finally relaxed. He felt that things were undoubtedly going very smoothly and there wouldn't be any unexpected issues.

Karl's case had already been reported to the organization. Many people knew about this matter, and it attracted wide attention. Of course, this was still Captain Johnson's doing

Morris was powerful and had accumulated a lot of connections over the years. After the incident, many people had spoken up for him and put pressure on the inspection unit. The inspection unit had originally planned to let Morris be released early, but with Old Terry's death along with Captain Johnson's actions, it was not appropriate to let him go. After all, if they were to forcefully let him go now, it would probably arouse the displeasure of the crowd.

The large conference room of the special department could accommodate a hundred people. All the staff members of the special department were present. Morris had broken the law and helped Nora give Old Terry the gene serum. This matter was going to be judged today. After all, Morris's actions at that time were to save people, so the inspection unit did not know how to punish him.

At this moment, the meeting room was fully packed.

Most of the people inside were divided into two parts.

A portion of them was of Morris's loyal supporters. They had worked with him for many years and believed in him. They even said, "Captain Ford is also doing this to save people! If there are lives in danger, would we not prioritize saving people over violating some rules?"

The other group was led by Mark.

Janson was heartbroken and depressed, but Mark was indignant and retorted, "Then why didn't he convict Karl even after so long? He didn't even allow me to interrogate him! There must be something wrong!"

"That's right. Don't we know what gene serums are? They're harmful! They're poison! This is what we've been fighting against. Over the years, how many colleagues have been sacrificed to fight against the mysterious organization that makes this gene serum? In the end, you want to use this thing on one of our own? How ridiculous!"

The person supporting Morris said, "But Captain Ford did it to save people!" "But Old Terry is dead! He's not saved! The facts have proven that we were right! Captain Ford is too extreme. The special department has even become his one-man hall! Also, why is the trial against Karl Moore delayed? We clearly have all the evidence!"

As the crowd was in a heated argument, the door to the meeting room was pushed open. Then, accompanied by a staff member from the inspection unit, Morris strode into the meeting room.

The moment he entered, the entire conference room instantly became silent.

Everyone looked at him.

As he had been detained for two days, a black beard had appeared on Morris's chin. At this moment, he looked more like a mature man.

His gaze was like an eagle as it swept across everyone present, causing them to shut their mouths.

Morris and a few people from the Ministry of Supervision sat on the stage and looked down. One of them then started speaking, "Alright, now the special department is divided into two factions regarding Morris's situation. One half thinks that Captain Ford has been negligent in his work. As long as he apologizes to Janson, this matter will be over. The other half thinks that Captain Ford has used illegal drugs from the special department recklessly and seriously violated the law. He should be dismissed from his post till further investigation! Now, we want to ask the public's opinion!"

As soon as he said this, the two sides started arguing again.

Their words were the same as earlier.

Looking at the heated discussion, Captain Johnson suddenly said, "Um, I'll say something. Everyone, please listen to me."

He sighed and said, "I was the one who brought Morris into this industry. Now that I'm going to judge him, I really can't bear it. But there's nothing I can do. He has done something wrong and made some bad judgments! If anyone gets hurt in the future and says that the gene serum can be used to save lives, will he break the law and take it out again? We have to firmly put an end to such things! Therefore, in this situation, I suggest reducing the punishment for Morris. A dismissal is too serious. We should let him work from the bottom again and punish him with three months of salary cut as a show of service. I wonder if anyone has any objections?"

This kind of neutralized opinion instantly shook the people below.

Those who originally thought that Morris should be punished but still had some feelings for him and could not bear to remove him from the Investigation Committee immediately nodded.

Those who were originally on Morris's side also felt that this plan was reasonable...

For a moment, this proposal from Captain Johnson received the agreement of most people!

Mark stood up as well. "To be honest, Captain Ford has indeed worked hard and provided meritorious service all these years. I think it's too big of a punishment for him to be dismissed. I can't bear for Captain Morris to leave either. I think what Captain Johnson has said can be done! If he starts from

the bottom again, I believe Captain Ford will be able to rely on his contributions to return to this position quickly!”

Everyone nodded. “Yes.”

When Captain Johnson heard this, he was very satisfied.

He was doing this on purpose!

Morris had too many connections and too deep of a background. He could not possibly slap Morris to death. He could only take a step back and let him resign. Then, the chair of the Special Case Department Head would be his now!

This was his goal.

Seeing that everyone below had agreed, the people from the inspection unit then looked at Morris. “Captain Ford, do you have any objections to this punishment?”

With that, everyone looked at Morris.

Morris lowered his eyes. After a moment, he suddenly looked up and said slowly, “Yes.”

Everyone fell silent again.

Captain Johnson frowned. “Morris, this punishment is already very light. You knew the rules and violated them, so you have to pay the price. People can’t just be forgiven when they’ve done something wrong!”

“You’re right.”

Morris laughed coldly and suddenly stood up. “It’s very hard to cover up when you’ve done something wrong. What about a murderer? Compared to my mistake, isn’t your mistake more serious?”

These words made Captain Johnson’s pupils shrink. He sneered and said, “Morris, Karl keeps saying that I killed Old Terry, but do you really trust him over me? You’ve really disappointed me. Do you have any evidence to say that I have killed someone?”

“Of course.”

Morris said slowly, "Not only do I have evidence, but I also have a witness!"

With that, he looked at the door. He was clearly here to be judged, but he turned the tables and said, "Come in."

Accompanying this sentence, Nora strode in lazily and yawned, pushing a wheelchair along.

Her face was filled with impatience as if she had not slept enough. Her expression was not very good.

However, no one noticed that at the moment. Everyone's attention was on the person in the wheelchair.

It was Old Terry.

When Old Terry appeared on the scene, the entire audience was shocked.

Janson stood up in shock and looked at Old Terry in disbelief.

Why was his father here?

He should be in the hospital's mortuary. While Janson was so shocked, Captain Johnson's heart was already in turmoil!

Old Terry... He was clearly dead!

He couldn't be alive after he had drugged him.

He swallowed hard and looked at Old Terry in horror. The person who had appeared there was like a demon! A demon that had climbed out of hell.

Before Captain Johnson could speak, Janson's eyes were already red. He took a step forward. "Dad, you're still alive?"

Old Terry's head was wrapped in gauze. The gauze on his head covered half his head, and the other half was horribly swollen. His voice seemed to be blocked by something in his throat. It was very hoarse, and it was very uncomfortable to hear.

He slowly said, "I'm not dead, I'm still alive."

It was really him!

Everyone present widened their eyes. Why was he still alive?

Old Terry's next answer puzzled everyone. "The gene serum can even restore brain cells. How could I have died?"

Captain Johnson swallowed.

He thought that he could rest easy after seeing Old Terry die with his own eyes. However, he did not expect him to be alive! Had the gene serum cured the poison he had injected?

How could... this be?!

Thus, in the end, even if he was meticulous, he had still lost to fate!

"Uncle Terry, it's great that you're still alive!" Mark's feelings were purer than others. It was also easier for him to recover from his daze. He rushed to Old Terry and said with red eyes, "Tell everyone now who shot you?!"

With that, he complained aggrievedly, "Karl has been arrested, but he refused to confess. Captain Ford actually said that he felt aggrieved. He even accused Captain Johnson of killing you. How is this possible... You're awake now, tell everyone who shot you that day!"

Mark glared at Morris. Before Old Terry could speak, he said, "Captain Ford, if Old Terry personally testifies, you can use it as absolute evidence, right? If you still think the evidence is insufficient, we won't accept it if you don't punish Karl Moore!"

"Right, we can't accept this!"

Behind Mark, many hot-blooded youths from the special department shouted.

Morris's gaze was sharp. Despite being criticized and questioned by so many former companions, he said calmly, "Let Old Terry speak first!"

Everyone looked at Old Terry.

Mark even walked to Old Terry. "Uncle Terry, hurry up and speak. Karl framed Captain Johnson and Captain Ford believed Karl's words. Quickly clear Captain Johnson's name!"

Captain Johnson, who was shielded behind him, had a livid expression, his eyes flickering.

He knew that he was completely finished this time.

Old Terry coughed a few times. It seemed like even his cough was very uncomfortable. He even touched his head and looked at Captain Johnson. "Old Johnson, I had already woken up yesterday. I didn't come yesterday was because I couldn't figure out why you had shot me?"

With that, the entire place fell silent

Everyone seemed baffled by this sentence, but they also seemed to understand it. Then, they suddenly looked at Captain Johnson.

Janson was the first to react. He shouted at Captain Johnson, "Uncle Johnson, it was you who shot my father? You! But why... Why did you try to kill my father?!"

Captain Johnson narrowed his eyes and refused to admit it. "Old Terry, are you confused? I think you're just confused. How could I try to kill you? Have you been bewitched?"

With that, the people around looked at Old Terry.

The people in the special department were all passionate youths.

In order to carry out their mission, they had sacrificed countless people and many comrades. Therefore, the camaraderie between them was comparable to that of real brothers.

Captain Johnson was their role model whom they looked up to.

Many young people were comforted by Captain Johnson when they felt lost in life.

Therefore, after the incident, everyone would definitely choose to trust their leaders and comrades!

Even at this moment, everyone trusted Captain Johnson more.

Mark shouted, "Uncle Terry, what are you talking about?"

Old Terry sighed and continued, “Old Johnson, I understand now. Back then, Karl was my informant. When I retired, I transferred him to you. At that time, I was not in good health. I stayed in the hospital for half a month and was even in a coma. Before I fainted, I gave you his contact details and asked you to tell him that I’d retired him from undercover duty. You didn’t tell him, did you?”

Captain Johnson pursed his lips. “Old Terry, I don’t know what you’re talking about!”

Old Terry sighed again. “You know, I have evidence that he’s an undercover agent! Old Johnson, I’ve never doubted you. Over the years, you’ve used the intelligence he provided to solve many cases. Don’t you know how you got from a lowly beat cop to where you are today? How could you still treat him like this?! The reason you killed me and framed him was because of that charity fund, right?”

When Captain Johnson heard Old Terry’s last sentence, he knew that he could not hide it anymore! Old Terry said slowly, “Your son is overseas. He bought a sports car worth \$5,000,000. Where did this money come from?”

Captain Johnson stammered, “How... how would I know? He didn’t buy a sports car at all. What nonsense are you talking about?”

Old Terry’s voice was very hoarse, and his words were sharp and unpleasant. “We have all the records of whether he bought it or not. I can get the bank to send them over right now. The money your son spent buying a car and a house outside are all from the charity foundation Karl gave you, right?”

Captain Johnson was flustered. “You...”

“Back then, when you contacted him with the information I gave you, you did not reveal your identity. He thought that you were me, so he told you that he wanted to give New York a charity. Then, when he talked about money, you were tempted, right? You pretended to be me because Karl only trusted me! You took the money and put it all in your own pocket! We’ve already investigated your bank accounts. Old Johnson, you can’t deny it!”

When Captain Johnson heard these words, he knew that he had to admit it no matter how much he lied.

Morris shouted, “Captain Johnson, aren’t you going to confess now?”

Captain Johnson looked at him suddenly and shouted, "Even if I confess, you can't escape from what you've done with the gene serum!"

Captain Johnson hated Morris to the core.

He was ashamed to face Old Terry. After all, he was the one who had shot him.

Karl had given him a lot of money over the years.

Therefore, when he saw that Karl was captured by the special department, Johnson was afraid that he would expose his identity and lead the special department to investigate the fund.

Captain Johnson helped Karl escape because he wanted him to leave New York and be of use to him in the future.

Unfortunately, Karl had actually stayed for his daughter's wedding.

In order to prevent any accidents, Captain Johnson had gotten the sniper to shoot him at the wedding. He wanted to kill him so that there would be no risk.

Unfortunately, Nora had stirred things up again. After that, she had arrested Karl. Morris had watched Karl closely and made him unable to do anything

Karl had forced him to look for Old Terry. Helpless, he could only call Old Terry over.

However, no matter how much he calculated, he had missed Nora and Morris's persistence!

If Morris was not so persistent, he could have convicted Karl after Old Terry died or gotten someone to kill him. The matter could still be controlled.

Unfortunately, Morris was too protective of Karl!

And Nora, this little b*tch, actually developed some gene serum and saved Old Terry, who should have died!

It was all their fault, all their fault!

Captain Johnson knew that he had already been exposed. There was nothing else to say. He shouted angrily, "And you, Nora. I asked you to come to the

special department to catch the mysterious organization, not to develop the gene serum. But what have you done? Do you think you're much better than me? I just want money, but you're in cahoots with the people from the mysterious organization. What you do is no different from the mysterious organization!"

Morris looked at him and sighed deeply. "Captain Johnson, what we're talking about now is your murder charge." Captain Johnson sneered and said, "I'm at most considered to have attempted murder! But your and Nora's crimes are far too serious. I just want to ask you something. If gene serum can treat illnesses and save lives, and can even bring people back to life, then what is the meaning of the years of work we have done targeting the mysterious organization?! This research they've done is beneficial to humans!" "Your actions make all our actions seem so ridiculous! Is the birth of this drug supposed to make us hurry up and submit to the mysterious organization?" "And you, Old Terry. Don't look at me like that. You're stupid. You don't know how to earn money. Is it wrong for me to make money? I've risked my life so many times. On what basis can I not live as well as others? Those people from wealthy families can casually earn money, live in mansions, and drive good cars. But what about us?"

He looked around. "Our existence is a joke! This drug developed by the mysterious organization that we've been trying so hard to catch has become your life-saving straw!"

"Morris, I attempted murder. You're not any better off than me. It was you who made the special department dispensable!" If the drugs in the mysterious organization could really save lives, should the mysterious organization really be outlawed?

This question appeared in the hearts of many members of the special department at the same time.

They had fought for so many years and sacrificed so many companions. What was the reason? Was the justice they insisted on even right?

Just as everyone was confused, they suddenly heard a scoff. "Old Johnson, in that case, you admit to your crimes?"

Captain Johnson narrowed his eyes. "Yes, I confess. I attempted murder and choose to surrender. My sentence will be lighter!"

“But regarding Morris, I strongly urge the Ministry of Supervision to deal with him seriously! He covers the sky with one hand in the special department and is playing a good role in reversing the situation! Heh, his thoughts are evil and his heart is already leaning towards the mysterious organization!”

As soon as Captain Johnson finished speaking, he saw Old Terry suddenly laugh softly. That laughter was clear and was no longer as hoarse as before.

Captain Johnson was stunned.

Everyone was stunned and looked at Old Terry in disbelief.

Old Terry reached out and pulled at the skin at the chin, tearing off a piece to reveal Brenda’s stunning face!

This time, no one could speak.

This sudden change in attitude caught everyone off guard.

After tearing off the fake skin on her face, Brenda stood up and took off the wig. Her beautiful hair fell down and she stood there beautifully in her hospital gown. “Captain Johnson, I’m sorry to inform you that Old Terry is really dead. You didn’t commit attempted murder. You have committed a real murder!”

Captain Johnson widened his eyes. He took a step back and looked at Brenda before looking at Morris and Nora again...

At this moment, someone instantly understood something... This group of people had no evidence of him killing anyone. Even the transfer record was forged carefully. It was difficult for anyone to notice.

When he killed Old Terry, he had done it flawlessly!

Morris had no evidence to prove Karl’s innocence. After all, he had the motive to kill Old Terry. Unless Old Terry said it himself and testified as a witness.

However, Old Terry was already on his last breath at the time. He could not have lived!

Therefore, that gene serum was not so magical at all. It only healed Quentin’s injuries, but it could not revive the dead!

Old Terry was really dead!

However, this group of people had put on a show for him. It was a miracle that Quentin's bones had recovered. Johnson had seen a medical miracle with his own eyes, so he believed that Old Terry could be treated.

The moment Old Terry appeared, he did not doubt his authenticity.

However, he had forgotten what Brenda was best at-Disguise!

When Captain Johnson figured this out, the people from the inspection unit said, "Captain Johnson, you've already admitted yourself that you killed Old Terry. The motive and evidence are enough! What else do you have to say?!"

What else could he say?

Nothing!

Captain Johnson knew that it was useless to say anything now. He looked at Morris and Nora angrily. "I want to say that these two people have violated the rules of the special department and used the gene serum to treat Quentin without permission. This is all Nora's private use of public power!"

Even if he died, he had to make Morris and Nora suffer along!

However, as soon as he finished speaking, he saw Nora, who was behind Brenda, yawn heavily. Then, she said casually, "Gene serum? Are you talking about this?"

She casually picked up an iron box and opened it. There were rows of transparent glass bottles inside.

Nora slowly curved her lips. "These are just vitamins."

Nora was very focused when she worked. When she was overseas, she would often work for a few days and nights in a row. After that, she would sleep for a very long time. Therefore, she had specially made a vitamin solution to prevent hypoglycemia in her sleep.

Lily only needed to inject this solution into her body. She did not need to wake up herself. She could sleep for 72 hours, or even more.

Captain Johnson was stunned. "How... how is this possible?" Nora raised her eyebrows. Because she had not slept enough, her temper was a little grumpy as she spoke impatiently in a hoarse voice, "The inspection unit has already

collected the needles and syringes I used on Old Terry that day. They have checked the composition inside and confirmed that it is indeed a vitamin solution. Why do you think Captain Ford and I were let out?"

They had been acquitted!

Furthermore, the Inspection unit had cooperated with them and put on a show!

As for the medicine used on Quentin...

The gene serum Nora had pretended to inject was all a cover to fool Janson into convincing Captain Johnson.

The drug actually used for Quentin's treatment was administered later on!

She did not sleep for three days and three nights to synthesize an excellent drug for the recovery of his bones using the medical skills given by her master, Dr. Zabe. This medicine was the Bone Adhesion Balm.

Quentin was finally able to stand up because of that drug. The drug would not take effect that fast, but to help her convince Captain Johnson, Quentin had stood up forcefully and walked back and forth.

Now, he was lying on the bed again. He had been injured for a hundred days, not to mention that his bones had been rejoined. He had to recuperate well later on.

As for Old Terry...

Since his temples had exploded, there was no way to save him and he had died on the very same day. However, how and when to tell the others about his death was all planned by Nora. At this point, the truth was revealed. Captain Johnson was arrested and taken away by the Inspection unit. What awaited him next was trial and execution. The death penalty was unavoidable. After all, his crime was too serious.

Janson realized that his father had really passed away and started crying. Mark and the others felt as if their worlds had collapsed.

Just as everyone was feeling mixed emotions, Ruth suddenly rushed out.

Her arm was still wrapped in bandages and her charming face was filled with fear. She said, "Officers, I want to report something!"

When she said this, the people from the Inspection unit looked at her.

Ruth said, "Captain Johnson had asked me to develop a plan to interrogate Karl. I found it very strange at the time, so I kept delaying the plans. Now, I understand. Fortunately, I trusted Captain Ford. So that's how it is! Anyway, I want to report something!"

The people from the Inspection unit and the surrounding special departments all looked at her.

Ruth said righteously, "When I went to his room to find some information, I realized that his computer was switched on. He had logged onto an external network. I checked his records and realized that Captain Johnson had posted a message on a foreign underworld forum. He said that Nora had a gene serum, he was trying to attract overseas organizations to fight for it. I think the reason he did that was also to stop Old Terry's treatment."

Her words made the expressions of the people change drastically.

Captain Johnson had already committed a heinous crime by killing people for money. However, they did not expect him to be in contact with foreign underworld? They definitely needed to investigate if he was a spy! The officer from the Inspection unit said, "Comrade Ruth, the intelligence you have provided is very important. We will thoroughly investigate the matter! If any of you people have any other information for us, you have to tell it in time!"

Ruth's eyes were red as she lowered her head. "Although I grew up overseas and was recommended by Captain Johnson to join the special department, I knew this place was my home when I came to New York. I didn't expect Captain Johnson to be such a vile person..."

The people from the Inspection unit could only comfort her. "It's okay. This has nothing to do with you." Ruth sighed. "I know it has nothing to do with me, but it was Captain Johnson who recommended me to the special department. This..."

The people from the Ministry of Supervision immediately calmed her down. "It's okay. The special department welcomes all talented people! Besides, you've done a good job by reporting Captain Johnson!"

Ruth heaved a sigh of relief.

This was the reason she had rushed out to snitch against Captain Johnson.

She had been recommended by Captain Johnson. If he left, she was afraid that the department would chase her away.

She hurriedly looked at Morris and said, "Captain Ford, Black Cat and I have already sorted out the interrogation plan. If we interrogate them accordingly, I guarantee that they will all speak!"

Morris stared at Ruth.

Morris was a person who cared about principles when he did things. Although Ruth had always been against Nora in the past, she had never done anything against his principles.

Moreover, Captain Johnson had just been arrested. If he turned around and dealt with Ruth, he would leave a bad impression on the other people in the special department, making them feel uneasy.

At the thought of this, Morris said, "Work hard. Don't spend so much time on those trivial matters in the future!"

Ruth blushed and she said, "Yes Sir!"

Morris then looked to the side and wanted to speak to Nora, but he saw Nora and Brenda already walking out when he turned his head.

Nora was so tired that she did not want to speak, but she still looked at Brenda in confusion. "You are quite good at disguises. Your acting was very realistic." Brenda said, "Of course. I'm made use of my makeup and forgery techniques to the limit!" Nora was curious. "Can you impersonate anyone?"

Brenda said, "No, it would be very difficult to impersonate you. After all, your head is smaller than mine. I would prefer someone with a big head. I just need to add some skin and stuff like that. If I had to impersonate you... Do you think I can peel off a layer of skin?"

The two of them walked along busy chatting. Just as they left the door, they saw Justin standing in the parking lot. His tall and slender figure was noticeable at a glance.

He was leaning against the car with his legs crossed. When he saw the two of them, he immediately stood up and walked toward them.

Brenda clicked her tongue twice and said in a lazy and charming tone, “Justin, you were married to your job when you weren’t with Nora in the past. Now that you have Nora, have you thrown your job away in some cold corner?”

Justin ignored her.

Instead, he opened the car door and said to Nora, “Let’s go home and catch up on your sleep.”

Nora nodded and got into the car.

Justin walked to the other side and was about to get into the car when Ruth suddenly came running out of the special department. When she saw him, her eyes instantly lit up and she hurried over. “Mr. Hunt, I really have something to tell you!”

Justin did not even look at her and got into the car.

Ruth had no choice but to bite her lips and shout, “It’s about the child! You’ll regret it if you don’t listen!”

About the child?

Justin’s footsteps paused as his long and cold eyes looked at her. However, he only glanced at her casually before getting into the car.

He had nothing to say to Ruth about the child.

The car started and Ruth chased after it. Just as she was about to reach the car, Lawrence suddenly came out and grabbed her. “Miss Ruth, let’s talk!”

When Ruth saw that it was him again, she bit her lip in anger and said, “I really have something important to discuss with Mr. Hunt! It’s about the child! His son!”

Lawrence lowered his eyes. “What’s wrong with Pete? Tell me first.”

Ruth’s eyes were firm as she slowly said, “No, I must discuss this with Mr. Hunt face to face. I won’t say anything until I see him!”

The corners of Lawrence's mouth twitched. "This trick again. Are you going to ask him out on a date when you see him? Miss Ruth, I've already seen this trick of yours a million times. I advise you to behave yourself! Mr. Hunt has a fiancée! It's Miss Smith, do you understand?"

He pursed his lips and looked at Ruth up and down. "Please take a good look at yourself. What about you compares to Miss Smith? Your face? Your figure? Or your talent? Tsk! Look in the mirror if you have the time!"

Lawrence got into the car and left behind Justin.

Ruth was left alone in embarrassment.

She clenched her fists tightly and took a deep breath after a moment. "Just wait and see! I'll expose the person you like sooner or later and make her fall from grace!!"

The limousine was driving back to the Smiths.

Justin personally drove so Nora could rest without any hindrance. He drove the car so smoothly not even a little vibration could be felt.

SU

Nora lay on the big bed on the backseat and slept with her eyes closed.

She had only fallen asleep when she suddenly sat up.

She hesitated for a moment. "Did we forget something?"

Justin looked at her. "What can I forget? Just go to sleep."

Nora's face was pale and listless. Her almond-shaped eyes were lowered and she could barely open them. When she heard Justin's words, she thought that it was probably nothing serious, so she lay down again. This time, she really fell into a deep

sleep.

Not long after their car left, Karl was released from the special department.

Everyone in the special department stared at him.

Janson had gone to settle Old Terry's funeral matters, so Mark represented him as he stood there. The moment Karl came out, he stood straight as a wall and saluted.

An undercover colleague was someone they should admire the most. However, under Captain Johnson's guidance, he had instead humiliated Karl several times over the past few days.

V

SU

At this moment, Mark really felt that he had been wrong. "Sir, I was wrong! Please hit me and vent your anger!"

Young officers were always hot-blooded. However, they could realize their mistakes and change. They did not always have bad intentions.

Karl looked at him and thought of his younger days...

He patted Mark's shoulder and said, "You did the right thing. Even if there's no evidence and you have doubts about the enemy, you must have complete faith in your comrades!"

Just as he himself had never doubted Old Terry all these years.

Even if such a thing had happened before, it should not have caused the people in the special department to have a crisis of distrust toward their comrades.

Mark's face turned even redder. "But Captain Johnson turned out to be like this. Can our comrades be trusted?"

"Yes!"

Karl replied affirmatively, "There are always exceptions. But those willing to give up everything for the people deserve respect." They could not let the people in the special department have a trust crisis because of Captain Johnson.

Mark nodded thoughtfully. At this moment, Morris held a uniform in his hand and walked to Karl with steel steps. He suddenly saluted Karl and handed him the uniform. "Karl, welcome home."

Welcome home.

These words made Karl's eyes turn red.

With trembling fingers, he slowly took the uniform and returned Morris's salute.

Then he turned and walked out.

Along the way, people from the special department kept looking at him. People saluted Karl one after another as he walked past them. With everyone's attention on him, Karl went out the door.

In the solemn and tragic atmosphere, Karl's voice suddenly came from outside the door. "Where's Nora? This heartless person. Did she not think of taking me home?! Do I have to take a taxi home?!"

Everyone was speechless.

Morris hurried over and arranged for a car from the special department to send him home.

At the Smiths.

After reaching the Smith Manor, Justin picked up Nora, who was in deep sleep, and took her inside.

The matter had been resolved, and Austin had not come to the country.

Ian was very satisfied. It was rare that he did not have a bad expression of Justin.

Justin went upstairs and gently placed Nora on the bed. Then, he heard the commotion downstairs.

His brows drew together tightly.

He went out and looked downstairs. He realized that it was Sue. At this moment, she was pointing at Tanya. "Tanya, your status is so awkward now! Your father killed a person and even killed a policeman! He's simply too lawless!"

Tanya rolled her eyes and ignored her. However, just as she was about to go upstairs, Sue said, "You're now the mistress of our family. It's too embarrassing to have a murderer as a father! Look, so many invitation letters have been sent to my house. No one dares to invite you. Therefore, Joel, don't you think I should be the one appearing as the mistress of the Smiths?"

Many people wanted to curry favor with the Smiths to do business. As the mistress, she could get many gifts from them.

Being the mistress of the Smiths was a very glorious thing.

Sue was using Tanya's bad reputation to vie for this position!

She really courted death every day.

Joel lowered his eyes. "I won't trouble you with that kind of thing."

"How is it trouble? I'm also a member of the Smiths. Besides, Tanya's status is too awkward now, and she's not suitable to appear in public. Isn't it my responsibility then?"

Almost as soon as she finished speaking, a police car stopped outside the villa with a screech.

The Smith manor was still some distance away from the gates.

Thus, when the police car stopped, the security guard hurriedly popped his head out the window and was badly frightened. "Are they here to arrest someone again?"

Puzzled, the butler went out and went up to the police car politely. Just as he was about to speak, the car window rolled down, revealing Karl's face. He asked, "Is Tanya at home?"

The butler was taken aback. "Mrs. Smith has been home all along. Mr. Moore, have you... hijacked a police car?"

Had Karl broken out of jail and even stolen a police car?

Wasn't he a little too bold?

The butler's thoughts terrified him.

Upon hearing what he said, Karl broke into a grin. He even patted the steering wheel and asked, "Is this car dashing or what?" The butler: "..."

"C'mon, cut the crap and open the door! I'm going in to look for my daughter!" Following Karl's words, the butler swallowed. He ultimately didn't dare to stop Karl from entering, so he opened the gates.

The car swayed about as Karl drove carelessly on the driveway.

In the living room.

Tanya's eyes were lowered and she kept quiet.

With a cold look on his face, Joel said, "Grandaunt Sue, I don't find my wife's status awkward at all."

Sue curled her lips disdainfully and said, "You don't have to glorify her anymore. All of New York already knows by now that her father is a murderer. This has pretty much been cemented. We also have our own contacts that we can use to find out the information we want! Tanya is not invited to any of the events in the New York circle these days. If you don't believe me, then why don't you go out and have a look yourself? Think of all the invitations that the Smiths had received when Yvonne was still around. Who is going to send the Smiths any invitations now?"

She went on. "It's not just Tanya. Even Nora is also... What is a good girl like her doing being a forensic doctor? Doesn't she find it crass dealing with dead bodies every day? It's even taboo for many people, that's why they are not sending invitations to Nora anymore, either.

"But there are many things that require a woman to come forward and take care of. Take a look at the Smiths now, how many presentable women are there?"

"Besides, I'm here this time because of a huge transaction!"

Joel narrowed his eyes and looked at Sue.

Sue said, "There isn't any land available for purchase in New York lately, right? The real estate business is gradually failing. The part of our family's business in the real estate hasn't produced any profits this year! But I daresay

that this project of mine is definitely the most profitable in the real estate industry!”

Joel immediately understood what project Sue was talking about.

He immediately cut her off and said, “The Smiths will not brood over certain businesses. The real estate industry is not doing well anymore. It was a wise choice that we pulled out in time!”

He didn’t give Sue a chance to speak, but stood up and pushed her out instead. He said, “Grandaunt Sue, we have a lot to do. Why don’t you go home for now?”

Tanya watched the two of them.

Joel had always been a wily little fox. Even if he was obviously unhappy about something, he would still keep a smile on his face. He maintained a smiley disposition all year round and then decimated his enemies behind their backs.

He seldom got angry on the surface back then.

But he was actually starting to get physical now. It must be because what Sue was about to say had something to do with her.

As soon as the thought formed, Sue said, “Joel, don’t push me. Isn’t it for the sake of letting the Smiths profit that I’m here to talk about the project today? Are you going to deprive the Smiths of such huge profits just to protect your wife?”

Sue rushed up to Tanya and said, “Do you know? There is a big project in New York that all the companies are bidding for right now. The Smiths could have easily fought for it; it’s all because of you that we have let this project slip by us!”

Tanya frowned and looked at Joel.

Joel’s voice became even colder. “Grandaunt Sue, don’t force me into taking action against

you!”

Sue, however, lifted her chin and said, “Then why don’t you do it? But before you do, I still have to make this clear!”

She looked straight at Tanya and said, “This huge project was to build a courthouse on a plot of land in the suburbs! And since this building is so special, they require an engineering team with a crystal clear track record with the law! The Smiths have indeed never broken the law before even after being in business for so many years! But we now have a daughter-in-law with a murderer for a father! You’ve utterly ruined the Smiths’ reputation! We can’t bid on the project anymore just because of you!”

Tanya bit her lip when she heard this.

As for Joel, he immediately shouted, “Where’s the housekeeper?!”

Lucy entered the room and said, “I’m here.”

“Show Grandaunt Sue out!”

“Yes, sir.”

Lucy took a step forward as she spoke. She grabbed Sue’s hand right away and started to drag her toward the door.

Sue, however, sneered and said, “Joel, do you think this problem will just go away if you drive me out and stop me from talking? Even if I don’t say anything about it, both of you should know that it’s all because of her father that we have been barred from the project! Hah, we, the Smiths, have never so brazenly broken the law all these years, but we have totally embarrassed ourselves this time! Are you still going to defend a wife like that?” To be honest, building a courthouse didn’t bring much profit.

However, it was a representation of one’s corporate reputation in the country!

It was indeed extremely unsightly that the Smiths’ engineering team didn’t even qualify to bid on the project.

However...

Joel refuted her. “We may not be able to win the project even if we bid for it, anyway! How can you blame it all on Tanya?”

Sue sneered, “With what all the outsiders are saying, the Smiths have utterly embarrassed themselves, yet you are still defending her! Not only is a matriarch like her unable to do anything for the Smiths, but she’s even giving

us a whole lot of trouble! Joel, I told you, I came here with a project! As long as you let me be the matriarch of the Smiths on the surface, I can convince the Department of Housing and Urban Development to give the Smiths a chance to participate in the bidding! Whether we make money or not doesn't matter; what matters is earning back the reputation we have lost!"

Joel frowned. He was about to speak when police sirens came from the door.

Sue's eyes lit up at once when she heard the police sirens. She pointed at Tanya and said excitedly, "Hear that? The police are here again! Have we become at constant loggerheads with the police? Tanya's father must have gotten himself in trouble again, they're here to arrest Tanya now!"

As soon as she said that, a wild and boorish voice came from the door. "Who dares to arrest my daughter?!"

Upon hearing this, the few of them looked over one after another and saw Karl striding in wearing a police uniform!

A shudder went through Sue when she heard his voice. Seeing that it was Karl walking in, Sue was reminded of the terror she had felt being dominated by him the last time, and her legs turned into jelly.

Karl was dressed in a police uniform, which covered all of his tattoos and made him look very righteous. It was just that there was no change to his simple and honest image.

As he entered, Karl grinned at Tanya and said, "I'm back."

Tanya's eyes reddened.

Joel put his arm around her shoulders. After greeting his daughter, Karl finally looked at Sue. Upon recognizing her, he frowned and said with displeasure, "You again?" Sue swallowed hard. "No, it's not me!"

Karl: ?

Sue was so terrified that she didn't dare to speak. Instead, she said to Tanya and Joel, "Um, I have something to do, so I'll be going now!"

She hurried out after speaking, upon which she spotted the police car parked at the door.

Sue became even more scared and almost fell onto the ground. She got into the car and immediately told the chauffeur to quickly drive off. When they reached the gates, she saw the butler instructing his subordinates, "Quick, close the gates. If anyone comes and asks about Mr. Joel's in-laws, just tell them that you don't know anything!"

"Yes, sir!"

The butler sighed. "He even has the guts to steal a police car. Surely Mr. Moore didn't really break out of prison again, right?"

Sue became even more scared and she didn't dare to say any more. She immediately urged the chauffeur to hurry up and drive back home.

But when she got home, the more Sue thought about it, the more scared she became.

She said to Samuel, "People like Karl Moore are all devils who kill without even batting an eyelid. Do you think he will come to take revenge against me?"

Samuel was, surprisingly, relatively calm. He replied, "I know that family well. Although they seem cold and ruthless, they are reliable... As long as you don't provoke them, they won't do anything to you."

Samuel just found Ian an eyesore, that's why he was always going against him. However, he had never harbored any thoughts of harming the Smiths.

Sue, however, said, "But I have already made an agreement with the other party. They will give the Smiths a chance to bid for the project and I will give them money! This way, I would also become the matriarch of the Smiths. With that, won't all the Smiths' little opportunities to make money be ours in the future?"

Samuel curled his lips disdainfully. "Dream on. The matriarch of the Smiths? You sure dare to dream big. With how stingy Ian is, he has all the power in the family tightly in his grasp, okay? His word is absolute in for the Smiths! Joel was personally taught and groomed by him. Do you think he will ever make you the matriarch of the Smiths? Don't even think about it!"

Seeing that even Samuel wasn't cooperating with her, Sue got anxious. "Why are you being such a loser? Haven't you ever thought of improving our family's conditions?"

She walked back and forth in the room. Then, she went out. "No, this won't do. I'm calling the cops!"

Samuel was taken aback. "What are you going crazy for?"

Sue replied, "I am a good, law-abiding citizen. Now that someone like him has broken out of jail again, I have to inform the police about it! Even if it is not for money, I am afraid that he will come over in the middle of the night and murder me! There are murder cases everywhere these days. It's not like you haven't seen the news!"

Before Samuel could recover, Sue had already left.

The forty to fifty-year-old woman was a bit chubby but didn't look swollen. She merely looked a little well-fed. Her butt twisted from side to side as she got into the car and went straight to the nearest police station. The moment she entered, she immediately said, "Officer, I'd like to make a police report! A murderer has broken out of jail and is now hiding at the Smith Manor!"

At the Smiths.

Karl didn't have the time to bother with Sue after she fled. Instead, he asked, "What project is it? I can talk to them!"

He was now a hero in the special department. Morris definitely wouldn't reject him if he asked to give the relevant departments a heads-up.

Joel smiled and replied, "No, it's fine. You've only just returned, you should take a good bath and rest instead!"

The fact that Karl had returned in the uniform showed that what Nora had said was all correct. From the looks of it, Karl's identity must have been reinstated.

The obstacle standing in the way of the Smiths would go away even without him speaking with the relevant authorities.

Upon hearing what Joel said, Karl sniffed himself. Then, he scratched his head and looked at Tanya. “Do I smell? I’ve been taking baths every day in the special department!”

As he spoke, he even stretched his arm towards Tanya so that she could take a sniff as well.

Tanya: “...”

She pushed Karl’s arm away and sighed. “There are dumplings in the kitchen. Do you want some?”

Karl’s eyes lit up. “Yes!”

Tanya walked to the kitchen straight away.

The servant in the kitchen said, “What do you need, Ma’am? Let me do it!”

“No, it’s fine,” replied Tanya. Then, she took out the frozen dumplings from the refrigerator and put them in the pot.

Karl came over. The servant smiled and said, “Mrs. Smith made these dumplings herself. She didn’t let us help at all! You’re so blessed, Mr. Moore!”

The simple-looking Karl couldn’t stop chuckling

Ian came downstairs at this time.

He could get out of the wheelchair and walk with crutches by now, and his recovery was going well. When he saw Karl, he huffily asked, “Old man, why are you in my house again?”

Karl craned his neck and replied, “I don’t have a house in New York, so where my daughter is is my home!”

When Tanya saw Ian, she asked, “Dad, would you also like a plate of dumplings?”.

Ever since Joel started calling him “Dad”, Tanya had also changed her term of address for Ian.

But as soon as she called him “Dad”, Karl became jealous. “Girl, why are you calling him Dad? He’s not eating!”

Ian couldn't help but smile. The moment the smile formed, his good looks immediately revealed themselves. He had always been an attractive man. Now that he was keeping himself well-maintained, and his cheeks had become a bit fleshier, he looked a lot younger than before. His smile was very elegant. He said, "I'll have a plate."

Initially, he hadn't wanted to eat it, but just for the sake of annoying Karl, he would have a plate of dumplings, no matter what.

Karl said, "... My daughter made them for me! You are not allowed to eat any!"

Ian leaned on the crutches and sneered, "This is my house! Get out of here!"

While the two old men were arguing as if they were children, a group of police officers suddenly swarmed in through the doorway!

There were about ten officers. All of them were wearing bulletproof vests and had surrounded the living room. Ian frowned and asked, "What's going on?" The perspiration-soaked butler came after them and replied, "Sir, I tried to intercept them, but they refuse to listen to me..."

What accompanied his words was Sue walking in from behind the policemen. She pointed at Karl and shouted, "Officer, that's him! He is a murderer! He even escaped from prison and stole your car!" Karl:"??"

Karl was still holding the bowl of dumplings that Tanya had prepared for him when the policemen surrounded him. The officer at the front looked at him warily and asked, "Who are

you?"

Karl neatened his uniform, waved, and replied, "One of you, obviously!"

Sue immediately yelled, "You mustn't believe him, officer! His affairs were all over the news just some time ago! Quick, arrest him! He had already escaped from jail once to attend his daughter's wedding!"

Someone had filmed Karl's escape from prison to attend the wedding the other time. The video had made it to the news, making him a household name in New York.

Therefore, the police officers had also heard a little about it. They looked at Karl in surprise.

Karl: "..."

He put down the bowl of dumplings, sighed, and then took out his ID from his pocket and threw it to the leading police officer from a distance.

The man flipped open the ID. Upon seeing the badge number on it, he opened up the system and keyed in his information. Karl's profile appeared at once. When he saw the words "Went undercover for 25 years. Returned to the team on XX day of XX month of XX year" among other things, he was filled with awe and respect at once. Sue was still sneering at them. "Tanya, you are too much! Hurry up and persuade your father to surrender! Don't drag the Smiths into this! You mustn't be so selfish! Now that you have become known as a murderer's daughter, it's already very hard for you to socialize in New York. You'll be breaking the law if you continue to shelter a criminal! Even if you must break the law to help your father, how can you drag the Smiths? You—".

was

Sue was very afraid of Karl, so she was hiding behind the leading policeman as she spoke. While she was speaking, though, she saw the policeman suddenly straightening his back. Then, he saluted Karl!

After that, with a wave from him, the other SWAT officers also immediately stood straight and put away their weapons. Then, the leading policeman walked up to Karl and respectfully returned his ID. "Thank you for your hard work!"

Sue: "??"

Karl waved him off. "Not at all."

After Karl put away his credentials, just as the policemen were about to leave, he suddenly said, "There are costs for you guys to respond to a call like this, right?"

Of course.

It took time for everyone to gather at the training ground, collect their equipment, and set off.

Before the leader could reply, Karl looked at Sue again and said, "You can't just respond to a call for nothing. Why not take this woman who made the false police report back with you and educate her?"

"Yes, sir!"

Karl was a retiree of the special department. Morris had even given him several medals. All the contributions he had made were all apparent on his clothes in the form of medals.

Thus, his position was much higher than the other officers'.

Upon hearing what Karl said, the officers immediately held Sue down. Dumbfounded, Sue shouted, "No! I'm not...! I didn't...! What is going on? I don't know anything at all! ..."

It was just a shame that they couldn't hear the rest of what she said as the group of policemen was very efficient. They took her with them straightaway.

After they left, Karl looked at Ian. "The Smiths suck. How come random people just waltz in so casually?"

The butler came in at this point.

To be honest, the butler had already received news of the police officers' impending arrival before they had even arrived. He had specially asked Joel whether he should let them in or

not.

The Smith Manor wasn't a place that they could enter just because they wanted to!

Joel had agreed to it at that time and instructed the Smiths' bodyguards not to get into a conflict with them.

However, Ian and Joel couldn't be bothered to explain.

After mocking them about it, Karl took his bowl of dumplings and started digging in. He even said unceremoniously, "Get a room ready for

me."

Ian looked at him frostily. "Are you even planning to take up permanent residence here?"

"Of course."

Karl said, "I am now employed, so I will have to work in New York from now on. What, are you guys going to drive me away? If so, then I'll be taking both my daughter and granddaughter with me." Ian curled his lips disdainfully. "Would I be afraid of you? I just think that it's too pitiful for you to live all by yourself! Fine, fine, stay here if that's what you want!"

Chapter 546 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

"Uncle Terry, it's great that you're still alive!" Mark's feelings were purer than others. It was also easier for him to recover from his daze. He rushed to Old Terry and said with red eyes, "Tell everyone now who shot you?!"

With that, he complained aggrievedly, "Karl has been arrested, but he refused to confess. Captain Ford actually said that he felt aggrieved. He even accused Captain Johnson of killing you. How is this possible... You're awake now, tell everyone who shot you that day!"

Mark glared at Morris. Before Old Terry could speak, he said, "Captain Ford, if Old Terry personally testifies, you can use it as absolute evidence, right? If you still think the evidence is insufficient, we won't accept it if you don't punish Karl Moore!"

"Right, we can't accept this!"

Behind Mark, many hot-blooded youths from the special department shouted.

Morris's gaze was sharp. Despite being criticized and questioned by so many former companions, he said calmly, "Let Old Terry speak first!"

Everyone looked at Old Terry.

Mark even walked to Old Terry. "Uncle Terry, hurry up and speak. Karl framed Captain Johnson and Captain Ford believed Karl's words. Quickly clear Captain Johnson's name!"

Captain Johnson, who was shielded behind him, had a livid expression, his eyes flickering.

He knew that he was completely finished this time.

Old Terry coughed a few times. It seemed like even his cough was very uncomfortable. He even touched his head and looked at Captain Johnson. "Old Johnson, I had already woken up yesterday. I didn't come yesterday was because I couldn't figure out why you had shot me?"

With that, the entire place fell silent

Everyone seemed baffled by this sentence, but they also seemed to understand it. Then, they suddenly looked at Captain Johnson.

Janson was the first to react. He shouted at Captain Johnson, "Uncle Johnson, it was you who shot my father? You! But why... Why did you try to kill my father?!"

Captain Johnson narrowed his eyes and refused to admit it. "Old Terry, are you confused? I think you're just confused. How could I try to kill you? Have you been bewitched?"

With that, the people around looked at Old Terry.

The people in the special department were all passionate youths.

In order to carry out their mission, they had sacrificed countless people and many comrades. Therefore, the camaraderie between them was comparable to that of real brothers.

Captain Johnson was their role model whom they looked up to.

Many young people were comforted by Captain Johnson when they felt lost in life.

Therefore, after the incident, everyone would definitely choose to trust their leaders and comrades!

Even at this moment, everyone trusted Captain Johnson more.

Mark shouted, "Uncle Terry, what are you talking about?"

Old Terry sighed and continued, "Old Johnson, I understand now. Back then, Karl was my informant. When I retired, I transferred him to you. At that time, I was not in good health. I stayed in the hospital for half a month and was even

in a coma. Before I fainted, I gave you his contact details and asked you to tell him that I'd retired him from undercover duty. You didn't tell him, did you?"

Captain Johnson pursed his lips. "Old Terry, I don't know what you're talking about!"

Old Terry sighed again. "You know, I have evidence that he's an undercover agent! Old Johnson, I've never doubted you. Over the years, you've used the intelligence he provided to solve many cases. Don't you know how you got from a lowly beat cop to where you are today? How could you still treat him like this?! The reason you killed me and framed him was because of that charity fund, right?"

When Captain Johnson heard Old Terry's last sentence, he knew that he could not hide it anymore! Old Terry said slowly, "Your son is overseas. He bought a sports car worth \$5,000,000. Where did this money come from?"

Captain Johnson stammered, "How... how would I know? He didn't buy a sports car at all. What nonsense are you talking about?"

Old Terry's voice was very hoarse, and his words were sharp and unpleasant. "We have all the records of whether he bought it or not. I can get the bank to send them over right now. The money your son spent buying a car and a house outside are all from the charity foundation Karl gave you, right?"

Captain Johnson was flustered. "You..."

"Back then, when you contacted him with the information I gave you, you did not reveal your identity. He thought that you were me, so he told you that he wanted to give New York a charity. Then, when he talked about money, you were tempted, right? You pretended to be me because Karl only trusted me! You took the money and put it all in your own pocket! We've already investigated your bank accounts. Old Johnson, you can't deny it!"

When Captain Johnson heard these words, he knew that he had to admit it no matter how much he lied.

Morris shouted, "Captain Johnson, aren't you going to confess now?"

Captain Johnson looked at him suddenly and shouted, "Even if I confess, you can't escape from what you've done with the gene serum!"

Captain Johnson hated Morris to the core.

He was ashamed to face Old Terry. After all, he was the one who had shot him.

Karl had given him a lot of money over the years.

Therefore, when he saw that Karl was captured by the special department, Johnson was afraid that he would expose his identity and lead the special department to investigate the fund.

Captain Johnson helped Karl escape because he wanted him to leave New York and be of use to him in the future.

Unfortunately, Karl had actually stayed for his daughter's wedding.

In order to prevent any accidents, Captain Johnson had gotten the sniper to shoot him at the wedding. He wanted to kill him so that there would be no risk.

Unfortunately, Nora had stirred things up again. After that, she had arrested Karl. Morris had watched Karl closely and made him unable to do anything

Karl had forced him to look for Old Terry. Helpless, he could only call Old Terry over.

However, no matter how much he calculated, he had missed Nora and Morris's persistence!

If Morris was not so persistent, he could have convicted Karl after Old Terry died or gotten someone to kill him. The matter could still be controlled.

Unfortunately, Morris was too protective of Karl!

And Nora, this little b*tch, actually developed some gene serum and saved Old Terry, who should have died!

It was all their fault, all their fault!

Captain Johnson knew that he had already been exposed. There was nothing else to say. He shouted angrily, "And you, Nora. I asked you to come to the special department to catch the mysterious organization, not to develop the gene serum. But what have you done? Do you think you're much better than me? I just want money, but you're in cahoots with the people from the

mysterious organization. What you do is no different from the mysterious organization!”

Morris looked at him and sighed deeply. “Captain Johnson, what we’re talking about now is your murder charge.” Captain Johnson sneered and said, “I’m at most considered to have attempted murder! But your and Nora’s crimes are far too serious. I just want to ask you something. If gene serum can treat illnesses and save lives, and can even bring people back to life, then what is the meaning of the years of work we have done targeting the mysterious organization?! This research they’ve done is beneficial to humans!” “Your actions make all our actions seem so ridiculous! Is the birth of this drug supposed to make us hurry up and submit to the mysterious organization?” “And you, Old Terry. Don’t look at me like that. You’re stupid. You don’t know how to earn money. Is it wrong for me to make money? I’ve risked my life so many times. On what basis can I not live as well as others? Those people from wealthy families can casually earn money, live in mansions, and drive good cars. But what about us?”

He looked around. “Our existence is a joke! This drug developed by the mysterious organization that we’ve been trying so hard to catch has become your life-saving straw!”

“Morris, I attempted murder. You’re not any better off than me. It was you who made the special department dispensable!” If the drugs in the mysterious organization could really save lives, should the mysterious organization really be outlawed?

This question appeared in the hearts of many members of the special department at the same time.

They had fought for so many years and sacrificed so many companions. What was the reason? Was the justice they insisted on even right?

Just as everyone was confused, they suddenly heard a scoff. “Old Johnson, in that case, you admit to your crimes?”

Captain Johnson narrowed his eyes. “Yes, I confess. I attempted murder and choose to surrender. My sentence will be lighter!”

“But regarding Morris, I strongly urge the Ministry of Supervision to deal with him seriously! He covers the sky with one hand in the special department and

is playing a good role in reversing the situation! Heh, his thoughts are evil and his heart is already leaning towards the mysterious organization!”

As soon as Captain Johnson finished speaking, he saw Old Terry suddenly laugh softly. That laughter was clear and was no longer as hoarse as before.

Captain Johnson was stunned.

Everyone was stunned and looked at Old Terry in disbelief.

Old Terry reached out and pulled at the skin at the chin, tearing off a piece to reveal Brenda’s stunning face!

This time, no one could speak.

This sudden change in attitude caught everyone off guard.

After tearing off the fake skin on her face, Brenda stood up and took off the wig. Her beautiful hair fell down and she stood there beautifully in her hospital gown. “Captain Johnson, I’m sorry to inform you that Old Terry is really dead. You didn’t commit attempted murder. You have committed a real murder!”

Captain Johnson widened his eyes. He took a step back and looked at Brenda before looking at Morris and Nora again...

At this moment, someone instantly understood something... This group of people had no evidence of him killing anyone. Even the transfer record was forged carefully. It was difficult for anyone to notice.

When he killed Old Terry, he had done it flawlessly!

Morris had no evidence to prove Karl’s innocence. After all, he had the motive to kill Old Terry. Unless Old Terry said it himself and testified as a witness.

However, Old Terry was already on his last breath at the time. He could not have lived!

Therefore, that gene serum was not so magical at all. It only healed Quentin’s injuries, but it could not revive the dead!

Old Terry was really dead!

However, this group of people had put on a show for him. It was a miracle that Quentin's bones had recovered. Johnson had seen a medical miracle with his own eyes, so he believed that Old Terry could be treated.

The moment Old Terry appeared, he did not doubt his authenticity.

However, he had forgotten what Brenda was best at-Disguise!

When Captain Johnson figured this out, the people from the inspection unit said, "Captain Johnson, you've already admitted yourself that you killed Old Terry. The motive and evidence are enough! What else do you have to say?!"

What else could he say?

Nothing!

Captain Johnson knew that it was useless to say anything now. He looked at Morris and Nora angrily. "I want to say that these two people have violated the rules of the special department and used the gene serum to treat Quentin without permission. This is all Nora's private use of public power!"

Even if he died, he had to make Morris and Nora suffer along!

However, as soon as he finished speaking, he saw Nora, who was behind Brenda, yawn heavily. Then, she said casually, "Gene serum? Are you talking about this?"

She casually picked up an iron box and opened it. There were rows of transparent glass bottles inside.

Nora slowly curved her lips. "These are just vitamins."

Nora was very focused when she worked. When she was overseas, she would often work for a few days and nights in a row. After that, she would sleep for a very long time. Therefore, she had specially made a vitamin solution to prevent hypoglycemia in her sleep.

Lily only needed to inject this solution into her body. She did not need to wake up herself. She could sleep for 72 hours, or even more.

Captain Johnson was stunned. "How... how is this possible?" Nora raised her eyebrows. Because she had not slept enough, her temper was a little grumpy as she spoke impatiently in a hoarse voice, "The inspection unit has already

collected the needles and syringes I used on Old Terry that day. They have checked the composition inside and confirmed that it is indeed a vitamin solution. Why do you think Captain Ford and I were let out?"

They had been acquitted!

Furthermore, the Inspection unit had cooperated with them and put on a show!

As for the medicine used on Quentin...

The gene serum Nora had pretended to inject was all a cover to fool Janson into convincing Captain Johnson.

The drug actually used for Quentin's treatment was administered later on!

She did not sleep for three days and three nights to synthesize an excellent drug for the recovery of his bones using the medical skills given by her master, Dr. Zabe. This medicine was the Bone Adhesion Balm.

Quentin was finally able to stand up because of that drug. The drug would not take effect that fast, but to help her convince Captain Johnson, Quentin had stood up forcefully and walked back and forth.

Now, he was lying on the bed again. He had been injured for a hundred days, not to mention that his bones had been rejoined. He had to recuperate well later on.

As for Old Terry...

Since his temples had exploded, there was no way to save him and he had died on the very same day. However, how and when to tell the others about his death was all planned by Nora. At this point, the truth was revealed. Captain Johnson was arrested and taken away by the Inspection unit. What awaited him next was trial and execution. The death penalty was unavoidable. After all, his crime was too serious.

Janson realized that his father had really passed away and started crying. Mark and the others felt as if their worlds had collapsed.

Just as everyone was feeling mixed emotions, Ruth suddenly rushed out.

Her arm was still wrapped in bandages and her charming face was filled with fear. She said, "Officers, I want to report something!"

When she said this, the people from the Inspection unit looked at her.

Ruth said, "Captain Johnson had asked me to develop a plan to interrogate Karl. I found it very strange at the time, so I kept delaying the plans. Now, I understand. Fortunately, I trusted Captain Ford. So that's how it is! Anyway, I want to report something!"

The people from the Inspection unit and the surrounding special departments all looked at her.

Ruth said righteously, "When I went to his room to find some information, I realized that his computer was switched on. He had logged onto an external network. I checked his records and realized that Captain Johnson had posted a message on a foreign underworld forum. He said that Nora had a gene serum, he was trying to attract overseas organizations to fight for it. I think the reason he did that was also to stop Old Terry's treatment."

Her words made the expressions of the people change drastically.

Captain Johnson had already committed a heinous crime by killing people for money. However, they did not expect him to be in contact with foreign underworld? They definitely needed to investigate if he was a spy! The officer from the Inspection unit said, "Comrade Ruth, the intelligence you have provided is very important. We will thoroughly investigate the matter! If any of you people have any other information for us, you have to tell it in time!"

Ruth's eyes were red as she lowered her head. "Although I grew up overseas and was recommended by Captain Johnson to join the special department, I knew this place was my home when I came to New York. I didn't expect Captain Johnson to be such a vile person..."

The people from the Inspection unit could only comfort her. "It's okay. This has nothing to do with you." Ruth sighed. "I know it has nothing to do with me, but it was Captain Johnson who recommended me to the special department. This..."

The people from the Ministry of Supervision immediately calmed her down. "It's okay. The special department welcomes all talented people! Besides, you've done a good job by reporting Captain Johnson!"

Ruth heaved a sigh of relief.

This was the reason she had rushed out to snitch against Captain Johnson.

She had been recommended by Captain Johnson. If he left, she was afraid that the department would chase her away.

She hurriedly looked at Morris and said, "Captain Ford, Black Cat and I have already sorted out the interrogation plan. If we interrogate them accordingly, I guarantee that they will all speak!"

Morris stared at Ruth.

Morris was a person who cared about principles when he did things. Although Ruth had always been against Nora in the past, she had never done anything against his principles.

Moreover, Captain Johnson had just been arrested. If he turned around and dealt with Ruth, he would leave a bad impression on the other people in the special department, making them feel uneasy.

At the thought of this, Morris said, "Work hard. Don't spend so much time on those trivial matters in the future!"

Ruth blushed and she said, "Yes Sir!"

Morris then looked to the side and wanted to speak to Nora, but he saw Nora and Brenda already walking out when he turned his head.

Nora was so tired that she did not want to speak, but she still looked at Brenda in confusion. "You are quite good at disguises. Your acting was very realistic." Brenda said, "Of course. I'm made use of my makeup and forgery techniques to the limit!" Nora was curious. "Can you impersonate anyone?"

Brenda said, "No, it would be very difficult to impersonate you. After all, your head is smaller than mine. I would prefer someone with a big head. I just need to add some skin and stuff like that. If I had to impersonate you... Do you think I can peel off a layer of skin?"

The two of them walked along busy chatting. Just as they left the door, they saw Justin standing in the parking lot. His tall and slender figure was noticeable at a glance.

He was leaning against the car with his legs crossed. When he saw the two of them, he immediately stood up and walked toward them.

Brenda clicked her tongue twice and said in a lazy and charming tone, “Justin, you were married to your job when you weren’t with Nora in the past. Now that you have Nora, have you thrown your job away in some cold corner?”

Justin ignored her.

Instead, he opened the car door and said to Nora, “Let’s go home and catch up on your sleep.”

Nora nodded and got into the car.

Justin walked to the other side and was about to get into the car when Ruth suddenly came running out of the special department. When she saw him, her eyes instantly lit up and she hurried over. “Mr. Hunt, I really have something to tell you!”

Justin did not even look at her and got into the car.

Ruth had no choice but to bite her lips and shout, “It’s about the child! You’ll regret it if you don’t listen!”

About the child?

Justin’s footsteps paused as his long and cold eyes looked at her. However, he only glanced at her casually before getting into the car.

He had nothing to say to Ruth about the child.

The car started and Ruth chased after it. Just as she was about to reach the car, Lawrence suddenly came out and grabbed her. “Miss Ruth, let’s talk!”

When Ruth saw that it was him again, she bit her lip in anger and said, “I really have something important to discuss with Mr. Hunt! It’s about the child! His son!”

Lawrence lowered his eyes. “What’s wrong with Pete? Tell me first.”

Ruth’s eyes were firm as she slowly said, “No, I must discuss this with Mr. Hunt face to face. I won’t say anything until I see him!”

The corners of Lawrence's mouth twitched. "This trick again. Are you going to ask him out on a date when you see him? Miss Ruth, I've already seen this trick of yours a million times. I advise you to behave yourself! Mr. Hunt has a fiancée! It's Miss Smith, do you understand?"

He pursed his lips and looked at Ruth up and down. "Please take a good look at yourself. What about you compares to Miss Smith? Your face? Your figure? Or your talent? Tsk! Look in the mirror if you have the time!"

Lawrence got into the car and left behind Justin.

Ruth was left alone in embarrassment.

She clenched her fists tightly and took a deep breath after a moment. "Just wait and see! I'll expose the person you like sooner or later and make her fall from grace!!"

The limousine was driving back to the Smiths.

Justin personally drove so Nora could rest without any hindrance. He drove the car so smoothly not even a little vibration could be felt.

SU

Nora lay on the big bed on the backseat and slept with her eyes closed.

She had only fallen asleep when she suddenly sat up.

She hesitated for a moment. "Did we forget something?"

Justin looked at her. "What can I forget? Just go to sleep."

Nora's face was pale and listless. Her almond-shaped eyes were lowered and she could barely open them. When she heard Justin's words, she thought that it was probably nothing serious, so she lay down again. This time, she really fell into a deep

sleep.

Not long after their car left, Karl was released from the special department.

Everyone in the special department stared at him.

Janson had gone to settle Old Terry's funeral matters, so Mark represented him as he stood there. The moment Karl came out, he stood straight as a wall and saluted.

An undercover colleague was someone they should admire the most. However, under Captain Johnson's guidance, he had instead humiliated Karl several times over the past few days.

V

SU

At this moment, Mark really felt that he had been wrong. "Sir, I was wrong! Please hit me and vent your anger!"

Young officers were always hot-blooded. However, they could realize their mistakes and change. They did not always have bad intentions.

Karl looked at him and thought of his younger days...

He patted Mark's shoulder and said, "You did the right thing. Even if there's no evidence and you have doubts about the enemy, you must have complete faith in your comrades!"

Just as he himself had never doubted Old Terry all these years.

Even if such a thing had happened before, it should not have caused the people in the special department to have a crisis of distrust toward their comrades.

Mark's face turned even redder. "But Captain Johnson turned out to be like this. Can our comrades be trusted?"

"Yes!"

Karl replied affirmatively, "There are always exceptions. But those willing to give up everything for the people deserve respect." They could not let the people in the special department have a trust crisis because of Captain Johnson.

Mark nodded thoughtfully. At this moment, Morris held a uniform in his hand and walked to Karl with steel steps. He suddenly saluted Karl and handed him the uniform. "Karl, welcome home."

Welcome home.

These words made Karl's eyes turn red.

With trembling fingers, he slowly took the uniform and returned Morris's salute.

Then he turned and walked out.

Along the way, people from the special department kept looking at him. People saluted Karl one after another as he walked past them. With everyone's attention on him, Karl went out the door.

In the solemn and tragic atmosphere, Karl's voice suddenly came from outside the door. "Where's Nora? This heartless person. Did she not think of taking me home?! Do I have to take a taxi home?!"

Everyone was speechless.

Morris hurried over and arranged for a car from the special department to send him home.

At the Smiths.

After reaching the Smith Manor, Justin picked up Nora, who was in deep sleep, and took her inside.

The matter had been resolved, and Austin had not come to the country.

Ian was very satisfied. It was rare that he did not have a bad expression of Justin.

Justin went upstairs and gently placed Nora on the bed. Then, he heard the commotion downstairs.

His brows drew together tightly.

He went out and looked downstairs. He realized that it was Sue. At this moment, she was pointing at Tanya. "Tanya, your status is so awkward now! Your father killed a person and even killed a policeman! He's simply too lawless!"

Tanya rolled her eyes and ignored her. However, just as she was about to go upstairs, Sue said, "You're now the mistress of our family. It's too embarrassing to have a murderer as a father! Look, so many invitation letters have been sent to my house. No one dares to invite you. Therefore, Joel, don't you think I should be the one appearing as the mistress of the Smiths?"

Many people wanted to curry favor with the Smiths to do business. As the mistress, she could get many gifts from them.

Being the mistress of the Smiths was a very glorious thing.

Sue was using Tanya's bad reputation to vie for this position!

She really courted death every day.

Joel lowered his eyes. "I won't trouble you with that kind of thing."

"How is it trouble? I'm also a member of the Smiths. Besides, Tanya's status is too awkward now, and she's not suitable to appear in public. Isn't it my responsibility then?"

Almost as soon as she finished speaking, a police car stopped outside the villa with a screech.

The Smith manor was still some distance away from the gates.

Thus, when the police car stopped, the security guard hurriedly popped his head out the window and was badly frightened. "Are they here to arrest someone again?"

Puzzled, the butler went out and went up to the police car politely. Just as he was about to speak, the car window rolled down, revealing Karl's face. He asked, "Is Tanya at home?"

The butler was taken aback. "Mrs. Smith has been home all along. Mr. Moore, have you... hijacked a police car?"

Had Karl broken out of jail and even stolen a police car?

Wasn't he a little too bold?

The butler's thoughts terrified him.

Upon hearing what he said, Karl broke into a grin. He even patted the steering wheel and asked, "Is this car dashing or what?" The butler: "..."

"C'mon, cut the crap and open the door! I'm going in to look for my daughter!" Following Karl's words, the butler swallowed. He ultimately didn't dare to stop Karl from entering, so he opened the gates.

The car swayed about as Karl drove carelessly on the driveway.

In the living room.

Tanya's eyes were lowered and she kept quiet.

With a cold look on his face, Joel said, "Grandaunt Sue, I don't find my wife's status awkward at all."

Sue curled her lips disdainfully and said, "You don't have to glorify her anymore. All of New York already knows by now that her father is a murderer. This has pretty much been cemented. We also have our own contacts that we can use to find out the information we want! Tanya is not invited to any of the events in the New York circle these days. If you don't believe me, then why don't you go out and have a look yourself? Think of all the invitations that the Smiths had received when Yvonne was still around. Who is going to send the Smiths any invitations now?"

She went on. "It's not just Tanya. Even Nora is also... What is a good girl like her doing being a forensic doctor? Doesn't she find it crass dealing with dead bodies every day? It's even taboo for many people, that's why they are not sending invitations to Nora anymore, either.

"But there are many things that require a woman to come forward and take care of. Take a look at the Smiths now, how many presentable women are there?"

"Besides, I'm here this time because of a huge transaction!"

Joel narrowed his eyes and looked at Sue.

Sue said, "There isn't any land available for purchase in New York lately, right? The real estate business is gradually failing. The part of our family's business in the real estate hasn't produced any profits this year! But I daresay

that this project of mine is definitely the most profitable in the real estate industry!”

Joel immediately understood what project Sue was talking about.

He immediately cut her off and said, “The Smiths will not brood over certain businesses. The real estate industry is not doing well anymore. It was a wise choice that we pulled out in time!”

He didn’t give Sue a chance to speak, but stood up and pushed her out instead. He said, “Grandaunt Sue, we have a lot to do. Why don’t you go home for now?”

Tanya watched the two of them.

Joel had always been a wily little fox. Even if he was obviously unhappy about something, he would still keep a smile on his face. He maintained a smiley disposition all year round and then decimated his enemies behind their backs.

He seldom got angry on the surface back then.

But he was actually starting to get physical now. It must be because what Sue was about to say had something to do with her.

As soon as the thought formed, Sue said, “Joel, don’t push me. Isn’t it for the sake of letting the Smiths profit that I’m here to talk about the project today? Are you going to deprive the Smiths of such huge profits just to protect your wife?”

Sue rushed up to Tanya and said, “Do you know? There is a big project in New York that all the companies are bidding for right now. The Smiths could have easily fought for it; it’s all because of you that we have let this project slip by us!”

Tanya frowned and looked at Joel.

Joel’s voice became even colder. “Grandaunt Sue, don’t force me into taking action against

you!”

Sue, however, lifted her chin and said, “Then why don’t you do it? But before you do, I still have to make this clear!”

She looked straight at Tanya and said, "This huge project was to build a courthouse on a plot of land in the suburbs! And since this building is so special, they require an engineering team with a crystal clear track record with the law! The Smiths have indeed never broken the law before even after being in business for so many years! But we now have a daughter-in-law with a murderer for a father! You've utterly ruined the Smiths' reputation! We can't bid on the project anymore just because of you!"

Tanya bit her lip when she heard this.

As for Joel, he immediately shouted, "Where's the housekeeper?!"

Lucy entered the room and said, "I'm here."

"Show Grandaunt Sue out!"

"Yes, sir."

Lucy took a step forward as she spoke. She grabbed Sue's hand right away and started to drag her toward the door.

Sue, however, sneered and said, "Joel, do you think this problem will just go away if you drive me out and stop me from talking? Even if I don't say anything about it, both of you should know that it's all because of her father that we have been barred from the project! Hah, we, the Smiths, have never so brazenly broken the law all these years, but we have totally embarrassed ourselves this time! Are you still going to defend a wife like that?" To be honest, building a courthouse didn't bring much profit.

However, it was a representation of one's corporate reputation in the country!

It was indeed extremely unsightly that the Smiths' engineering team didn't even qualify to bid on the project.

However...

Joel refuted her. "We may not be able to win the project even if we bid for it, anyway! How can you blame it all on Tanya?"

Sue sneered, "With what all the outsiders are saying, the Smiths have utterly embarrassed themselves, yet you are still defending her! Not only is a matriarch like her unable to do anything for the Smiths, but she's even giving

us a whole lot of trouble! Joel, I told you, I came here with a project! As long as you let me be the matriarch of the Smiths on the surface, I can convince the Department of Housing and Urban Development to give the Smiths a chance to participate in the bidding! Whether we make money or not doesn't matter; what matters is earning back the reputation we have lost!"

Joel frowned. He was about to speak when police sirens came from the door.

Sue's eyes lit up at once when she heard the police sirens. She pointed at Tanya and said excitedly, "Hear that? The police are here again! Have we become at constant loggerheads with the police? Tanya's father must have gotten himself in trouble again, they're here to arrest Tanya now!"

As soon as she said that, a wild and boorish voice came from the door. "Who dares to arrest my daughter?!"

Upon hearing this, the few of them looked over one after another and saw Karl striding in wearing a police uniform!

A shudder went through Sue when she heard his voice. Seeing that it was Karl walking in, Sue was reminded of the terror she had felt being dominated by him the last time, and her legs turned into jelly.

Karl was dressed in a police uniform, which covered all of his tattoos and made him look very righteous. It was just that there was no change to his simple and honest image.

As he entered, Karl grinned at Tanya and said, "I'm back."

Tanya's eyes reddened.

Joel put his arm around her shoulders. After greeting his daughter, Karl finally looked at Sue. Upon recognizing her, he frowned and said with displeasure, "You again?" Sue swallowed hard. "No, it's not me!"

Karl: ?

Sue was so terrified that she didn't dare to speak. Instead, she said to Tanya and Joel, "Um, I have something to do, so I'll be going now!"

She hurried out after speaking, upon which she spotted the police car parked at the door.

Sue became even more scared and almost fell onto the ground. She got into the car and immediately told the chauffeur to quickly drive off. When they reached the gates, she saw the butler instructing his subordinates, "Quick, close the gates. If anyone comes and asks about Mr. Joel's in-laws, just tell them that you don't know anything!"

"Yes, sir!"

The butler sighed. "He even has the guts to steal a police car. Surely Mr. Moore didn't really break out of prison again, right?"

Sue became even more scared and she didn't dare to say any more. She immediately urged the chauffeur to hurry up and drive back home.

But when she got home, the more Sue thought about it, the more scared she became.

She said to Samuel, "People like Karl Moore are all devils who kill without even batting an eyelid. Do you think he will come to take revenge against me?"

Samuel was, surprisingly, relatively calm. He replied, "I know that family well. Although they seem cold and ruthless, they are reliable... As long as you don't provoke them, they won't do anything to you."

Samuel just found Ian an eyesore, that's why he was always going against him. However, he had never harbored any thoughts of harming the Smiths.

Sue, however, said, "But I have already made an agreement with the other party. They will give the Smiths a chance to bid for the project and I will give them money! This way, I would also become the matriarch of the Smiths. With that, won't all the Smiths' little opportunities to make money be ours in the future?"

Samuel curled his lips disdainfully. "Dream on. The matriarch of the Smiths? You sure dare to dream big. With how stingy Ian is, he has all the power in the family tightly in his grasp, okay? His word is absolute in for the Smiths! Joel was personally taught and groomed by him. Do you think he will ever make you the matriarch of the Smiths? Don't even think about it!"

Seeing that even Samuel wasn't cooperating with her, Sue got anxious. "Why are you being such a loser? Haven't you ever thought of improving our family's conditions?"

She walked back and forth in the room. Then, she went out. "No, this won't do. I'm calling the cops!"

Samuel was taken aback. "What are you going crazy for?"

Sue replied, "I am a good, law-abiding citizen. Now that someone like him has broken out of jail again, I have to inform the police about it! Even if it is not for money, I am afraid that he will come over in the middle of the night and murder me! There are murder cases everywhere these days. It's not like you haven't seen the news!"

Before Samuel could recover, Sue had already left.

The forty to fifty-year-old woman was a bit chubby but didn't look swollen. She merely looked a little well-fed. Her butt twisted from side to side as she got into the car and went straight to the nearest police station. The moment she entered, she immediately said, "Officer, I'd like to make a police report! A murderer has broken out of jail and is now hiding at the Smith Manor!"

At the Smiths.

Karl didn't have the time to bother with Sue after she fled. Instead, he asked, "What project is it? I can talk to them!"

He was now a hero in the special department. Morris definitely wouldn't reject him if he asked to give the relevant departments a heads-up.

Joel smiled and replied, "No, it's fine. You've only just returned, you should take a good bath and rest instead!"

The fact that Karl had returned in the uniform showed that what Nora had said was all correct. From the looks of it, Karl's identity must have been reinstated.

The obstacle standing in the way of the Smiths would go away even without him speaking with the relevant authorities.

Upon hearing what Joel said, Karl sniffed himself. Then, he scratched his head and looked at Tanya. “Do I smell? I’ve been taking baths every day in the special department!”

As he spoke, he even stretched his arm towards Tanya so that she could take a sniff as well.

Tanya: “...”

She pushed Karl’s arm away and sighed. “There are dumplings in the kitchen. Do you want some?”

Karl’s eyes lit up. “Yes!”

Tanya walked to the kitchen straight away.

The servant in the kitchen said, “What do you need, Ma’am? Let me do it!”

“No, it’s fine,” replied Tanya. Then, she took out the frozen dumplings from the refrigerator and put them in the pot.

Karl came over. The servant smiled and said, “Mrs. Smith made these dumplings herself. She didn’t let us help at all! You’re so blessed, Mr. Moore!”

The simple-looking Karl couldn’t stop chuckling

Ian came downstairs at this time.

He could get out of the wheelchair and walk with crutches by now, and his recovery was going well. When he saw Karl, he huffily asked, “Old man, why are you in my house again?”

Karl craned his neck and replied, “I don’t have a house in New York, so where my daughter is is my home!”

When Tanya saw Ian, she asked, “Dad, would you also like a plate of dumplings?”.

Ever since Joel started calling him “Dad”, Tanya had also changed her term of address for Ian.

But as soon as she called him “Dad”, Karl became jealous. “Girl, why are you calling him Dad? He’s not eating!”

Ian couldn't help but smile. The moment the smile formed, his good looks immediately revealed themselves. He had always been an attractive man. Now that he was keeping himself well-maintained, and his cheeks had become a bit fleshier, he looked a lot younger than before. His smile was very elegant. He said, "I'll have a plate."

Initially, he hadn't wanted to eat it, but just for the sake of annoying Karl, he would have a plate of dumplings, no matter what.

Karl said, "... My daughter made them for me! You are not allowed to eat any!"

Ian leaned on the crutches and sneered, "This is my house! Get out of here!"

While the two old men were arguing as if they were children, a group of police officers suddenly swarmed in through the doorway!

There were about ten officers. All of them were wearing bulletproof vests and had surrounded the living room. Ian frowned and asked, "What's going on?" The perspiration-soaked butler came after them and replied, "Sir, I tried to intercept them, but they refuse to listen to me..."

What accompanied his words was Sue walking in from behind the policemen. She pointed at Karl and shouted, "Officer, that's him! He is a murderer! He even escaped from prison and stole your car!" Karl:"??"

Karl was still holding the bowl of dumplings that Tanya had prepared for him when the policemen surrounded him. The officer at the front looked at him warily and asked, "Who are

you?"

Karl neatened his uniform, waved, and replied, "One of you, obviously!"

Sue immediately yelled, "You mustn't believe him, officer! His affairs were all over the news just some time ago! Quick, arrest him! He had already escaped from jail once to attend his daughter's wedding!"

Someone had filmed Karl's escape from prison to attend the wedding the other time. The video had made it to the news, making him a household name in New York.

Therefore, the police officers had also heard a little about it. They looked at Karl in surprise.

Karl: "..."

He put down the bowl of dumplings, sighed, and then took out his ID from his pocket and threw it to the leading police officer from a distance.

The man flipped open the ID. Upon seeing the badge number on it, he opened up the system and keyed in his information. Karl's profile appeared at once. When he saw the words "Went undercover for 25 years. Returned to the team on XX day of XX month of XX year" among other things, he was filled with awe and respect at once. Sue was still sneering at them. "Tanya, you are too much! Hurry up and persuade your father to surrender! Don't drag the Smiths into this! You mustn't be so selfish! Now that you have become known as a murderer's daughter, it's already very hard for you to socialize in New York. You'll be breaking the law if you continue to shelter a criminal! Even if you must break the law to help your father, how can you drag the Smiths? You—".

was

Sue was very afraid of Karl, so she was hiding behind the leading policeman as she spoke. While she was speaking, though, she saw the policeman suddenly straightening his back. Then, he saluted Karl!

After that, with a wave from him, the other SWAT officers also immediately stood straight and put away their weapons. Then, the leading policeman walked up to Karl and respectfully returned his ID. "Thank you for your hard work!"

Sue: "??"

Karl waved him off. "Not at all."

After Karl put away his credentials, just as the policemen were about to leave, he suddenly said, "There are costs for you guys to respond to a call like this, right?"

Of course.

It took time for everyone to gather at the training ground, collect their equipment, and set off.

Before the leader could reply, Karl looked at Sue again and said, "You can't just respond to a call for nothing. Why not take this woman who made the false police report back with you and educate her?"

"Yes, sir!"

Karl was a retiree of the special department. Morris had even given him several medals. All the contributions he had made were all apparent on his clothes in the form of medals.

Thus, his position was much higher than the other officers'.

Upon hearing what Karl said, the officers immediately held Sue down. Dumbfounded, Sue shouted, "No! I'm not...! I didn't...! What is going on? I don't know anything at all! ..."

It was just a shame that they couldn't hear the rest of what she said as the group of policemen was very efficient. They took her with them straightaway.

After they left, Karl looked at Ian. "The Smiths suck. How come random people just waltz in so casually?"

The butler came in at this point.

To be honest, the butler had already received news of the police officers' impending arrival before they had even arrived. He had specially asked Joel whether he should let them in or

not.

The Smith Manor wasn't a place that they could enter just because they wanted to!

Joel had agreed to it at that time and instructed the Smiths' bodyguards not to get into a conflict with them.

However, Ian and Joel couldn't be bothered to explain.

After mocking them about it, Karl took his bowl of dumplings and started digging in. He even said unceremoniously, "Get a room ready for

me."

Ian looked at him frostily. "Are you even planning to take up permanent residence here?"

"Of course."

Karl said, "I am now employed, so I will have to work in New York from now on. What, are you guys going to drive me away? If so, then I'll be taking both my daughter and granddaughter with me." Ian curled his lips disdainfully. "Would I be afraid of you? I just think that it's too pitiful for you to live all by yourself! Fine, fine, stay here if that's what you want!"

Chapter 547 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

At this moment, someone instantly understood something... This group of people had no evidence of him killing anyone. Even the transfer record was forged carefully. It was difficult for anyone to notice.

When he killed Old Terry, he had done it flawlessly!

Morris had no evidence to prove Karl's innocence. After all, he had the motive to kill Old Terry. Unless Old Terry said it himself and testified as a witness.

However, Old Terry was already on his last breath at the time. He could not have lived!

Therefore, that gene serum was not so magical at all. It only healed Quentin's injuries, but it could not revive the dead!

Old Terry was really dead!

However, this group of people had put on a show for him. It was a miracle that Quentin's bones had recovered. Johnson had seen a medical miracle with his own eyes, so he believed that Old Terry could be treated.

The moment Old Terry appeared, he did not doubt his authenticity.

However, he had forgotten what Brenda was best at-Disguise!

When Captain Johnson figured this out, the people from the inspection unit said, "Captain Johnson, you've already admitted yourself that you killed Old Terry. The motive and evidence are enough! What else do you have to say?!"

What else could he say?

Nothing!

Captain Johnson knew that it was useless to say anything now. He looked at Morris and Nora angrily. "I want to say that these two people have violated the rules of the special department and used the gene serum to treat Quentin without permission. This is all Nora's private use of public power!"

Even if he died, he had to make Morris and Nora suffer along!

However, as soon as he finished speaking, he saw Nora, who was behind Brenda, yawn heavily. Then, she said casually, "Gene serum? Are you talking about this?"

She casually picked up an iron box and opened it. There were rows of transparent glass bottles inside.

Nora slowly curved her lips. "These are just vitamins."

Nora was very focused when she worked. When she was overseas, she would often work for a few days and nights in a row. After that, she would sleep for a very long time. Therefore, she had specially made a vitamin solution to prevent hypoglycemia in her sleep.

Lily only needed to inject this solution into her body. She did not need to wake up herself. She could sleep for 72 hours, or even more.

Captain Johnson was stunned. "How... how is this possible?" Nora raised her eyebrows. Because she had not slept enough, her temper was a little grumpy as she spoke impatiently in a hoarse voice, "The inspection unit has already collected the needles and syringes I used on Old Terry that day. They have checked the composition inside and confirmed that it is indeed a vitamin solution. Why do you think Captain Ford and I were let out?"

They had been acquitted!

Furthermore, the Inspection unit had cooperated with them and put on a show!

As for the medicine used on Quentin...

The gene serum Nora had pretended to inject was all a cover to fool Janson into convincing Captain Johnson.

The drug actually used for Quentin's treatment was administered later on!

She did not sleep for three days and three nights to synthesize an excellent drug for the recovery of his bones using the medical skills given by her master, Dr. Zabe. This medicine was the Bone Adhesion Balm.

Quentin was finally able to stand up because of that drug. The drug would not take effect that fast, but to help her convince Captain Johnson, Quentin had stood up forcefully and walked back and forth.

Now, he was lying on the bed again. He had been injured for a hundred days, not to mention that his bones had been rejoined. He had to recuperate well later on.

As for Old Terry...

Since his temples had exploded, there was no way to save him and he had died on the very same day. However, how and when to tell the others about his death was all planned by Nora. At this point, the truth was revealed. Captain Johnson was arrested and taken away by the Inspection unit. What awaited him next was trial and execution. The death penalty was unavoidable. After all, his crime was too serious.

Janson realized that his father had really passed away and started crying. Mark and the others felt as if their worlds had collapsed.

Just as everyone was feeling mixed emotions, Ruth suddenly rushed out.

Her arm was still wrapped in bandages and her charming face was filled with fear. She said, "Officers, I want to report something!"

When she said this, the people from the Inspection unit looked at her.

Ruth said, "Captain Johnson had asked me to develop a plan to interrogate Karl. I found it very strange at the time, so I kept delaying the plans. Now, I understand. Fortunately, I trusted Captain Ford. So that's how it is! Anyway, I want to report something!"

The people from the Inspection unit and the surrounding special departments all looked at her.

Ruth said righteously, “When I went to his room to find some information, I realized that his computer was switched on. He had logged onto an external network. I checked his records and realized that Captain Johnson had posted a message on a foreign underworld forum. He said that Nora had a gene serum, he was trying to attract overseas organizations to fight for it. I think the reason he did that was also to stop Old Terry’s treatment.”

Her words made the expressions of the people change drastically.

Captain Johnson had already committed a heinous crime by killing people for money. However, they did not expect him to be in contact with foreign underworld? They definitely needed to investigate if he was a spy! The officer from the Inspection unit said, “Comrade Ruth, the intelligence you have provided is very important. We will thoroughly investigate the matter! If any of you people have any other information for us, you have to tell it in time!”

Ruth’s eyes were red as she lowered her head. “Although I grew up overseas and was recommended by Captain Johnson to join the special department, I knew this place was my home when I came to New York. I didn’t expect Captain Johnson to be such a vile person...”

The people from the Inspection unit could only comfort her. “It’s okay. This has nothing to do with you.” Ruth sighed. “I know it has nothing to do with me, but it was Captain Johnson who recommended me to the special department. This...”

The people from the Ministry of Supervision immediately calmed her down. “It’s okay. The special department welcomes all talented people! Besides, you’ve done a good job by reporting Captain Johnson!”

Ruth heaved a sigh of relief.

This was the reason she had rushed out to snitch against Captain Johnson.

She had been recommended by Captain Johnson. If he left, she was afraid that the department would chase her away.

She hurriedly looked at Morris and said, "Captain Ford, Black Cat and I have already sorted out the interrogation plan. If we interrogate them accordingly, I guarantee that they will all speak!"

Morris stared at Ruth.

Morris was a person who cared about principles when he did things. Although Ruth had always been against Nora in the past, she had never done anything against his principles.

Moreover, Captain Johnson had just been arrested. If he turned around and dealt with Ruth, he would leave a bad impression on the other people in the special department, making them feel uneasy.

At the thought of this, Morris said, "Work hard. Don't spend so much time on those trivial matters in the future!"

Ruth blushed and she said, "Yes Sir!"

Morris then looked to the side and wanted to speak to Nora, but he saw Nora and Brenda already walking out when he turned his head.

Nora was so tired that she did not want to speak, but she still looked at Brenda in confusion. "You are quite good at disguises. Your acting was very realistic." Brenda said, "Of course. I'm made use of my makeup and forgery techniques to the limit!" Nora was curious. "Can you impersonate anyone?"

Brenda said, "No, it would be very difficult to impersonate you. After all, your head is smaller than mine. I would prefer someone with a big head. I just need to add some skin and stuff like that. If I had to impersonate you... Do you think I can peel off a layer of skin?"

The two of them walked along busy chatting. Just as they left the door, they saw Justin standing in the parking lot. His tall and slender figure was noticeable at a glance.

He was leaning against the car with his legs crossed. When he saw the two of them, he immediately stood up and walked toward them.

Brenda clicked her tongue twice and said in a lazy and charming tone, "Justin, you were married to your job when you weren't with Nora in the past. Now that you have Nora, have you thrown your job away in some cold corner?"

Justin ignored her.

Instead, he opened the car door and said to Nora, "Let's go home and catch up on your sleep."

Nora nodded and got into the car.

Justin walked to the other side and was about to get into the car when Ruth suddenly came running out of the special department. When she saw him, her eyes instantly lit up and she hurried over. "Mr. Hunt, I really have something to tell you!"

Justin did not even look at her and got into the car.

Ruth had no choice but to bite her lips and shout, "It's about the child! You'll regret it if you don't listen!"

About the child?

Justin's footsteps paused as his long and cold eyes looked at her. However, he only glanced at her casually before getting into the car.

He had nothing to say to Ruth about the child.

The car started and Ruth chased after it. Just as she was about to reach the car, Lawrence suddenly came out and grabbed her. "Miss Ruth, let's talk!"

When Ruth saw that it was him again, she bit her lip in anger and said, "I really have something important to discuss with Mr. Hunt! It's about the child! His son!"

Lawrence lowered his eyes. "What's wrong with Pete? Tell me first."

Ruth's eyes were firm as she slowly said, "No, I must discuss this with Mr. Hunt face to face. I won't say anything until I see him!"

The corners of Lawrence's mouth twitched. "This trick again. Are you going to ask him out on a date when you see him? Miss Ruth, I've already seen this trick of yours a million times. I advise you to behave yourself! Mr. Hunt has a fiancée! It's Miss Smith, do you understand?"

He pursed his lips and looked at Ruth up and down. "Please take a good look at yourself. What about you compares to Miss Smith? Your face? Your figure? Or your talent? Tsk! Look in the mirror if you have the time!"

Lawrence got into the car and left behind Justin.

Ruth was left alone in embarrassment.

She clenched her fists tightly and took a deep breath after a moment. "Just wait and see! I'll expose the person you like sooner or later and make her fall from grace!!"

The limousine was driving back to the Smiths.

Justin personally drove so Nora could rest without any hindrance. He drove the car so smoothly not even a little vibration could be felt.

SU

Nora lay on the big bed on the backseat and slept with her eyes closed.

She had only fallen asleep when she suddenly sat up.

She hesitated for a moment. "Did we forget something?"

Justin looked at her. "What can I forget? Just go to sleep."

Nora's face was pale and listless. Her almond-shaped eyes were lowered and she could barely open them. When she heard Justin's words, she thought that it was probably nothing serious, so she lay down again. This time, she really fell into a deep

sleep.

Not long after their car left, Karl was released from the special department.

Everyone in the special department stared at him.

Janson had gone to settle Old Terry's funeral matters, so Mark represented him as he stood there. The moment Karl came out, he stood straight as a wall and saluted.

An undercover colleague was someone they should admire the most. However, under Captain Johnson's guidance, he had instead humiliated Karl several times over the past few days.

V

SU

At this moment, Mark really felt that he had been wrong. "Sir, I was wrong! Please hit me and vent your anger!"

Young officers were always hot-blooded. However, they could realize their mistakes and change. They did not always have bad intentions.

Karl looked at him and thought of his younger days...

He patted Mark's shoulder and said, "You did the right thing. Even if there's no evidence and you have doubts about the enemy, you must have complete faith in your comrades!"

Just as he himself had never doubted Old Terry all these years.

Even if such a thing had happened before, it should not have caused the people in the special department to have a crisis of distrust toward their comrades.

Mark's face turned even redder. "But Captain Johnson turned out to be like this. Can our comrades be trusted?"

"Yes!"

Karl replied affirmatively, "There are always exceptions. But those willing to give up everything for the people deserve respect." They could not let the people in the special department have a trust crisis because of Captain Johnson.

Mark nodded thoughtfully. At this moment, Morris held a uniform in his hand and walked to Karl with steel steps. He suddenly saluted Karl and handed him the uniform. "Karl, welcome home."

Welcome home.

These words made Karl's eyes turn red.

With trembling fingers, he slowly took the uniform and returned Morris's salute.

Then he turned and walked out.

Along the way, people from the special department kept looking at him. People saluted Karl one after another as he walked past them. With everyone's attention on him, Karl went out the door.

In the solemn and tragic atmosphere, Karl's voice suddenly came from outside the door. "Where's Nora? This heartless person. Did she not think of taking me home?! Do I have to take a taxi home?!"

Everyone was speechless.

Morris hurried over and arranged for a car from the special department to send him home.

At the Smiths.

After reaching the Smith Manor, Justin picked up Nora, who was in deep sleep, and took her inside.

The matter had been resolved, and Austin had not come to the country.

Ian was very satisfied. It was rare that he did not have a bad expression of Justin.

Justin went upstairs and gently placed Nora on the bed. Then, he heard the commotion downstairs.

His brows drew together tightly.

He went out and looked downstairs. He realized that it was Sue. At this moment, she was pointing at Tanya. "Tanya, your status is so awkward now! Your father killed a person and even killed a policeman! He's simply too lawless!"

Tanya rolled her eyes and ignored her. However, just as she was about to go upstairs, Sue said, "You're now the mistress of our family. It's too embarrassing to have a murderer as a father! Look, so many invitation letters have been sent to my house. No one dares to invite you. Therefore, Joel, don't you think I should be the one appearing as the mistress of the Smiths?"

Many people wanted to curry favor with the Smiths to do business. As the mistress, she could get many gifts from them.

Being the mistress of the Smiths was a very glorious thing.

Sue was using Tanya's bad reputation to vie for this position!

She really courted death every day.

Joel lowered his eyes. "I won't trouble you with that kind of thing."

"How is it trouble? I'm also a member of the Smiths. Besides, Tanya's status is too awkward now, and she's not suitable to appear in public. Isn't it my responsibility then?"

Almost as soon as she finished speaking, a police car stopped outside the villa with a screech.

The Smith manor was still some distance away from the gates.

Thus, when the police car stopped, the security guard hurriedly popped his head out the window and was badly frightened. "Are they here to arrest someone again?"

Puzzled, the butler went out and went up to the police car politely. Just as he was about to speak, the car window rolled down, revealing Karl's face. He asked, "Is Tanya at home?"

The butler was taken aback. "Mrs. Smith has been home all along. Mr. Moore, have you... hijacked a police car?"

Had Karl broken out of jail and even stolen a police car?

Wasn't he a little too bold?

The butler's thoughts terrified him.

Upon hearing what he said, Karl broke into a grin. He even patted the steering wheel and asked, "Is this car dashing or what?" The butler: "..."

"C'mon, cut the crap and open the door! I'm going in to look for my daughter!" Following Karl's words, the butler swallowed. He ultimately didn't dare to stop Karl from entering, so he opened the gates.

The car swayed about as Karl drove carelessly on the driveway.

In the living room.

Tanya's eyes were lowered and she kept quiet.

With a cold look on his face, Joel said, "Grandaunt Sue, I don't find my wife's status awkward at all."

Sue curled her lips disdainfully and said, "You don't have to glorify her anymore. All of New York already knows by now that her father is a murderer. This has pretty much been cemented. We also have our own contacts that we can use to find out the information we want! Tanya is not invited to any of the events in the New York circle these days. If you don't believe me, then why don't you go out and have a look yourself? Think of all the invitations that the Smiths had received when Yvonne was still around. Who is going to send the Smiths any invitations now?"

She went on. "It's not just Tanya. Even Nora is also... What is a good girl like her doing being a forensic doctor? Doesn't she find it crass dealing with dead bodies every day? It's even taboo for many people, that's why they are not sending invitations to Nora anymore, either.

"But there are many things that require a woman to come forward and take care of. Take a look at the Smiths now, how many presentable women are there?"

"Besides, I'm here this time because of a huge transaction!"

Joel narrowed his eyes and looked at Sue.

Sue said, "There isn't any land available for purchase in New York lately, right? The real estate business is gradually failing. The part of our family's business in the real estate hasn't produced any profits this year! But I daresay that this project of mine is definitely the most profitable in the real estate industry!"

Joel immediately understood what project Sue was talking about.

He immediately cut her off and said, "The Smiths will not brood over certain businesses. The real estate industry is not doing well anymore. It was a wise choice that we pulled out in time!"

He didn't give Sue a chance to speak, but stood up and pushed her out instead. He said, "Grandaunt Sue, we have a lot to do. Why don't you go home for now?"

Tanya watched the two of them.

Joel had always been a wily little fox. Even if he was obviously unhappy about something, he would still keep a smile on his face. He maintained a smiley disposition all year round and then decimated his enemies behind their backs.

He seldom got angry on the surface back then.

But he was actually starting to get physical now. It must be because what Sue was about to say had something to do with her.

As soon as the thought formed, Sue said, "Joel, don't push me. Isn't it for the sake of letting the Smiths profit that I'm here to talk about the project today? Are you going to deprive the Smiths of such huge profits just to protect your wife?"

Sue rushed up to Tanya and said, "Do you know? There is a big project in New York that all the companies are bidding for right now. The Smiths could have easily fought for it; it's all because of you that we have let this project slip by us!"

Tanya frowned and looked at Joel.

Joel's voice became even colder. "Grandaunt Sue, don't force me into taking action against

you!"

Sue, however, lifted her chin and said, "Then why don't you do it? But before you do, I still have to make this clear!"

She looked straight at Tanya and said, "This huge project was to build a courthouse on a plot of land in the suburbs! And since this building is so special, they require an engineering team with a crystal clear track record with the law! The Smiths have indeed never broken the law before even after being in business for so many years! But we now have a daughter-in-law with a murderer for a father! You've utterly ruined the Smiths' reputation! We can't bid on the project anymore just because of you!"

Tanya bit her lip when she heard this.

As for Joel, he immediately shouted, "Where's the housekeeper?!"

Lucy entered the room and said, "I'm here."

"Show Grandaunt Sue out!"

"Yes, sir."

Lucy took a step forward as she spoke. She grabbed Sue's hand right away and started to drag her toward the door.

Sue, however, sneered and said, "Joel, do you think this problem will just go away if you drive me out and stop me from talking? Even if I don't say anything about it, both of you should know that it's all because of her father that we have been barred from the project! Hah, we, the Smiths, have never so brazenly broken the law all these years, but we have totally embarrassed ourselves this time! Are you still going to defend a wife like that?" To be honest, building a courthouse didn't bring much profit.

However, it was a representation of one's corporate reputation in the country!

It was indeed extremely unsightly that the Smiths' engineering team didn't even qualify to bid on the project.

However...

Joel refuted her. "We may not be able to win the project even if we bid for it, anyway! How can you blame it all on Tanya?"

Sue sneered, "With what all the outsiders are saying, the Smiths have utterly embarrassed themselves, yet you are still defending her! Not only is a matriarch like her unable to do anything for the Smiths, but she's even giving us a whole lot of trouble! Joel, I told you, I came here with a project! As long as you let me be the matriarch of the Smiths on the surface, I can convince the Department of Housing and Urban Development to give the Smiths a chance to participate in the bidding! Whether we make money or not doesn't matter; what matters is earning back the reputation we have lost!"

Joel frowned. He was about to speak when police sirens came from the door.

Sue's eyes lit up at once when she heard the police sirens. She pointed at Tanya and said excitedly, "Hear that? The police are here again! Have we become at constant loggerheads with the police? Tanya's father must have gotten himself in trouble again, they're here to arrest Tanya now!"

As soon as she said that, a wild and boorish voice came from the door. "Who dares to arrest my daughter?!"

Upon hearing this, the few of them looked over one after another and saw Karl striding in wearing a police uniform!

A shudder went through Sue when she heard his voice. Seeing that it was Karl walking in, Sue was reminded of the terror she had felt being dominated by him the last time, and her legs turned into jelly.

Karl was dressed in a police uniform, which covered all of his tattoos and made him look very righteous. It was just that there was no change to his simple and honest image.

As he entered, Karl grinned at Tanya and said, "I'm back."

Tanya's eyes reddened.

Joel put his arm around her shoulders. After greeting his daughter, Karl finally looked at Sue. Upon recognizing her, he frowned and said with displeasure, "You again?" Sue swallowed hard. "No, it's not me!"

Karl: ?

Sue was so terrified that she didn't dare to speak. Instead, she said to Tanya and Joel, "Um, I have something to do, so I'll be going now!"

She hurried out after speaking, upon which she spotted the police car parked at the door.

Sue became even more scared and almost fell onto the ground. She got into the car and immediately told the chauffeur to quickly drive off. When they reached the gates, she saw the butler instructing his subordinates, "Quick, close the gates. If anyone comes and asks about Mr. Joel's in-laws, just tell them that you don't know anything!"

"Yes, sir!"

The butler sighed. "He even has the guts to steal a police car. Surely Mr. Moore didn't really break out of prison again, right?"

Sue became even more scared and she didn't dare to say any more. She immediately urged the chauffeur to hurry up and drive back home.

But when she got home, the more Sue thought about it, the more scared she became.

She said to Samuel, "People like Karl Moore are all devils who kill without even batting an eyelid. Do you think he will come to take revenge against me?"

Samuel was, surprisingly, relatively calm. He replied, "I know that family well. Although they seem cold and ruthless, they are reliable... As long as you don't provoke them, they won't do anything to you."

Samuel just found Ian an eyesore, that's why he was always going against him. However, he had never harbored any thoughts of harming the Smiths.

Sue, however, said, "But I have already made an agreement with the other party. They will give the Smiths a chance to bid for the project and I will give them money! This way, I would also become the matriarch of the Smiths. With that, won't all the Smiths' little opportunities to make money be ours in the future?"

Samuel curled his lips disdainfully. "Dream on. The matriarch of the Smiths? You sure dare to dream big. With how stingy Ian is, he has all the power in the family tightly in his grasp, okay? His word is absolute in for the Smiths! Joel was personally taught and groomed by him. Do you think he will ever make you the matriarch of the Smiths? Don't even think about it!"

Seeing that even Samuel wasn't cooperating with her, Sue got anxious. "Why are you being such a loser? Haven't you ever thought of improving our family's conditions?"

She walked back and forth in the room. Then, she went out. "No, this won't do. I'm calling the cops!"

Samuel was taken aback. "What are you going crazy for?"

Sue replied, "I am a good, law-abiding citizen. Now that someone like him has broken out of jail again, I have to inform the police about it! Even if it is not for money, I am afraid that he will come over in the middle of the night and murder me! There are murder cases everywhere these days. It's not like you haven't seen the news!"

Before Samuel could recover, Sue had already left.

The forty to fifty-year-old woman was a bit chubby but didn't look swollen. She merely looked a little well-fed. Her butt twisted from side to side as she got into the car and went straight to the nearest police station. The moment she entered, she immediately said, "Officer, I'd like to make a police report! A murderer has broken out of jail and is now hiding at the Smith Manor!"

At the Smiths.

Karl didn't have the time to bother with Sue after she fled. Instead, he asked, "What project is it? I can talk to them!"

He was now a hero in the special department. Morris definitely wouldn't reject him if he asked to give the relevant departments a heads-up.

Joel smiled and replied, "No, it's fine. You've only just returned, you should take a good bath and rest instead!"

The fact that Karl had returned in the uniform showed that what Nora had said was all correct. From the looks of it, Karl's identity must have been reinstated.

The obstacle standing in the way of the Smiths would go away even without him speaking with the relevant authorities.

Upon hearing what Joel said, Karl sniffed himself. Then, he scratched his head and looked at Tanya. "Do I smell? I've been taking baths every day in the special department!"

As he spoke, he even stretched his arm towards Tanya so that she could take a sniff as well.

Tanya: "..."

She pushed Karl's arm away and sighed. "There are dumplings in the kitchen. Do you want some?"

Karl's eyes lit up. "Yes!"

Tanya walked to the kitchen straight away.

The servant in the kitchen said, "What do you need, Ma'am? Let me do it!"

"No, it's fine," replied Tanya. Then, she took out the frozen dumplings from the refrigerator and put them in the pot.

Karl came over. The servant smiled and said, "Mrs. Smith made these dumplings herself. She didn't let us help at all! You're so blessed, Mr. Moore!"

The simple-looking Karl couldn't stop chuckling

Ian came downstairs at this time.

He could get out of the wheelchair and walk with crutches by now, and his recovery was going well. When he saw Karl, he huffily asked, "Old man, why are you in my house again?"

Karl craned his neck and replied, "I don't have a house in New York, so where my daughter is is my home!"

When Tanya saw Ian, she asked, "Dad, would you also like a plate of dumplings?"

Ever since Joel started calling him "Dad", Tanya had also changed her term of address for Ian.

But as soon as she called him "Dad", Karl became jealous. "Girl, why are you calling him Dad? He's not eating!"

Ian couldn't help but smile. The moment the smile formed, his good looks immediately revealed themselves. He had always been an attractive man. Now that he was keeping himself well-maintained, and his cheeks had become a bit fleshier, he looked a lot younger than before. His smile was very elegant. He said, "I'll have a plate."

Initially, he hadn't wanted to eat it, but just for the sake of annoying Karl, he would have a plate of dumplings, no matter what.

Karl said, "... My daughter made them for me! You are not allowed to eat any!"

Ian leaned on the crutches and sneered, "This is my house! Get out of here!"

While the two old men were arguing as if they were children, a group of police officers suddenly swarmed in through the doorway!

There were about ten officers. All of them were wearing bulletproof vests and had surrounded the living room. Ian frowned and asked, "What's going on?" The perspiration-soaked butler came after them and replied, "Sir, I tried to intercept them, but they refuse to listen to me..."

What accompanied his words was Sue walking in from behind the policemen. She pointed at Karl and shouted, "Officer, that's him! He is a murderer! He even escaped from prison and stole your car!" Karl:"??"

Karl was still holding the bowl of dumplings that Tanya had prepared for him when the policemen surrounded him. The officer at the front looked at him warily and asked, "Who are

you?"

Karl neatened his uniform, waved, and replied, "One of you, obviously!"

Sue immediately yelled, "You mustn't believe him, officer! His affairs were all over the news just some time ago! Quick, arrest him! He had already escaped from jail once to attend his daughter's wedding!"

Someone had filmed Karl's escape from prison to attend the wedding the other time. The video had made it to the news, making him a household name in New York.

Therefore, the police officers had also heard a little about it. They looked at Karl in surprise.

Karl: "..."

He put down the bowl of dumplings, sighed, and then took out his ID from his pocket and threw it to the leading police officer from a distance.

The man flipped open the ID. Upon seeing the badge number on it, he opened up the system and keyed in his information. Karl's profile appeared at once. When he saw the words "Went undercover for 25 years. Returned to the team on XX day of XX month of XX year" among other things, he was filled with

awe and respect at once. Sue was still sneering at them. “Tanya, you are too much! Hurry up and persuade your father to surrender! Don’t drag the Smiths into this! You mustn’t be so selfish! Now that you have become known as a murderer’s daughter, it’s already very hard for you to socialize in New York. You’ll be breaking the law if you continue to shelter a criminal! Even if you must break the law to help your father, how can you drag the Smiths? You—”.

was

Sue was very afraid of Karl, so she was hiding behind the leading policeman as she spoke. While she was speaking, though, she saw the policeman suddenly straightening his back. Then, he saluted Karl!

After that, with a wave from him, the other SWAT officers also immediately stood straight and put away their weapons. Then, the leading policeman walked up to Karl and respectfully returned his ID. “Thank you for your hard work!”

Sue: “??”

Karl waved him off. “Not at all.”

After Karl put away his credentials, just as the policemen were about to leave, he suddenly said, “There are costs for you guys to respond to a call like this, right?”

Of course.

It took time for everyone to gather at the training ground, collect their equipment, and set off.

Before the leader could reply, Karl looked at Sue again and said, “You can’t just respond to a call for nothing. Why not take this woman who made the false police report back with you and educate her?”

“Yes, sir!”

Karl was a retiree of the special department. Morris had even given him several medals. All the contributions he had made were all apparent on his clothes in the form of medals.

Thus, his position was much higher than the other officers’.

Upon hearing what Karl said, the officers immediately held Sue down. Dumbfounded, Sue shouted, “No! I’m not...! I didn’t...! What is going on? I don’t know anything at all! ...”

It was just a shame that they couldn’t hear the rest of what she said as the group of policemen was very efficient. They took her with them straightaway.

After they left, Karl looked at Ian. “The Smiths suck. How come random people just waltz in so casually?”

The butler came in at this point.

To be honest, the butler had already received news of the police officers’ impending arrival before they had even arrived. He had specially asked Joel whether he should let them in or

not.

The Smith Manor wasn’t a place that they could enter just because they wanted to!

Joel had agreed to it at that time and instructed the Smiths’ bodyguards not to get into a conflict with them.

However, Ian and Joel couldn’t be bothered to explain.

After mocking them about it, Karl took his bowl of dumplings and started digging in. He even said unceremoniously, “Get a room ready for

me.”

Ian looked at him frostily. “Are you even planning to take up permanent residence here?”

“Of course.”

Karl said, “I am now employed, so I will have to work in New York from now on. What, are you guys going to drive me away? If so, then I’ll be taking both my daughter and granddaughter with me.” Ian curled his lips disdainfully. “Would I be afraid of you? I just think that it’s too pitiful for you to live all by yourself! Fine, fine, stay here if that’s what you want!”

Chapter 548 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

He had nothing to say to Ruth about the child.

The car started and Ruth chased after it. Just as she was about to reach the car, Lawrence suddenly came out and grabbed her. "Miss Ruth, let's talk!"

When Ruth saw that it was him again, she bit her lip in anger and said, "I really have something important to discuss with Mr. Hunt! It's about the child! His son!"

Lawrence lowered his eyes. "What's wrong with Pete? Tell me first."

Ruth's eyes were firm as she slowly said, "No, I must discuss this with Mr. Hunt face to face. I won't say anything until I see him!"

The corners of Lawrence's mouth twitched. "This trick again. Are you going to ask him out on a date when you see him? Miss Ruth, I've already seen this trick of yours a million times. I advise you to behave yourself! Mr. Hunt has a fiancée! It's Miss Smith, do you understand?"

He pursed his lips and looked at Ruth up and down. "Please take a good look at yourself. What about you compares to Miss Smith? Your face? Your figure? Or your talent? Tsk! Look in the mirror if you have the time!"

Lawrence got into the car and left behind Justin.

Ruth was left alone in embarrassment.

She clenched her fists tightly and took a deep breath after a moment. "Just wait and see! I'll expose the person you like sooner or later and make her fall from grace!!"

The limousine was driving back to the Smiths.

Justin personally drove so Nora could rest without any hindrance. He drove the car so smoothly not even a little vibration could be felt.

SU

Nora lay on the big bed on the backseat and slept with her eyes closed.

She had only fallen asleep when she suddenly sat up.

She hesitated for a moment. "Did we forget something?"

Justin looked at her. "What can I forget? Just go to sleep."

Nora's face was pale and listless. Her almond-shaped eyes were lowered and she could barely open them. When she heard Justin's words, she thought that it was probably nothing serious, so she lay down again. This time, she really fell into a deep

sleep.

Not long after their car left, Karl was released from the special department.

Everyone in the special department stared at him.

Janson had gone to settle Old Terry's funeral matters, so Mark represented him as he stood there. The moment Karl came out, he stood straight as a wall and saluted.

An undercover colleague was someone they should admire the most. However, under Captain Johnson's guidance, he had instead humiliated Karl several times over the past few days.

V

SU

At this moment, Mark really felt that he had been wrong. "Sir, I was wrong! Please hit me and vent your anger!"

Young officers were always hot-blooded. However, they could realize their mistakes and change. They did not always have bad intentions.

Karl looked at him and thought of his younger days...

He patted Mark's shoulder and said, "You did the right thing. Even if there's no evidence and you have doubts about the enemy, you must have complete faith in your comrades!"

Just as he himself had never doubted Old Terry all these years.

Even if such a thing had happened before, it should not have caused the people in the special department to have a crisis of distrust toward their comrades.

Mark's face turned even redder. "But Captain Johnson turned out to be like this. Can our comrades be trusted?"

"Yes!"

Karl replied affirmatively, "There are always exceptions. But those willing to give up everything for the people deserve respect." They could not let the people in the special department have a trust crisis because of Captain Johnson.

Mark nodded thoughtfully. At this moment, Morris held a uniform in his hand and walked to Karl with steel steps. He suddenly saluted Karl and handed him the uniform. "Karl, welcome home."

Welcome home.

These words made Karl's eyes turn red.

With trembling fingers, he slowly took the uniform and returned Morris's salute.

Then he turned and walked out.

Along the way, people from the special department kept looking at him. People saluted Karl one after another as he walked past them. With everyone's attention on him, Karl went out the door.

In the solemn and tragic atmosphere, Karl's voice suddenly came from outside the door. "Where's Nora? This heartless person. Did she not think of taking me home?! Do I have to take a taxi home?!"

Everyone was speechless.

Morris hurried over and arranged for a car from the special department to send him home.

At the Smiths.

After reaching the Smith Manor, Justin picked up Nora, who was in deep sleep, and took her inside.

The matter had been resolved, and Austin had not come to the country.

Ian was very satisfied. It was rare that he did not have a bad expression of Justin.

Justin went upstairs and gently placed Nora on the bed. Then, he heard the commotion downstairs.

His brows drew together tightly.

He went out and looked downstairs. He realized that it was Sue. At this moment, she was pointing at Tanya. "Tanya, your status is so awkward now! Your father killed a person and even killed a policeman! He's simply too lawless!"

Tanya rolled her eyes and ignored her. However, just as she was about to go upstairs, Sue said, "You're now the mistress of our family. It's too embarrassing to have a murderer as a father! Look, so many invitation letters have been sent to my house. No one dares to invite you. Therefore, Joel, don't you think I should be the one appearing as the mistress of the Smiths?"

Many people wanted to curry favor with the Smiths to do business. As the mistress, she could get many gifts from them.

Being the mistress of the Smiths was a very glorious thing.

Sue was using Tanya's bad reputation to vie for this position!

She really courted death every day.

Joel lowered his eyes. "I won't trouble you with that kind of thing."

"How is it trouble? I'm also a member of the Smiths. Besides, Tanya's status is too awkward now, and she's not suitable to appear in public. Isn't it my responsibility then?"

Almost as soon as she finished speaking, a police car stopped outside the villa with a screech.

The Smith manor was still some distance away from the gates.

Thus, when the police car stopped, the security guard hurriedly popped his head out the window and was badly frightened. "Are they here to arrest someone again?"

Puzzled, the butler went out and went up to the police car politely. Just as he was about to speak, the car window rolled down, revealing Karl's face. He asked, "Is Tanya at home?"

The butler was taken aback. "Mrs. Smith has been home all along. Mr. Moore, have you... hijacked a police car?"

Had Karl broken out of jail and even stolen a police car?

Wasn't he a little too bold?

The butler's thoughts terrified him.

Upon hearing what he said, Karl broke into a grin. He even patted the steering wheel and asked, "Is this car dashing or what?" The butler: "..."

"C'mon, cut the crap and open the door! I'm going in to look for my daughter!" Following Karl's words, the butler swallowed. He ultimately didn't dare to stop Karl from entering, so he opened the gates.

The car swayed about as Karl drove carelessly on the driveway.

In the living room.

Tanya's eyes were lowered and she kept quiet.

With a cold look on his face, Joel said, "Grandaunt Sue, I don't find my wife's status awkward at all."

Sue curled her lips disdainfully and said, "You don't have to glorify her anymore. All of New York already knows by now that her father is a murderer. This has pretty much been cemented. We also have our own contacts that we can use to find out the information we want! Tanya is not invited to any of the events in the New York circle these days. If you don't believe me, then why don't you go out and have a look yourself? Think of all the invitations that the Smiths had received when Yvonne was still around. Who is going to send the Smiths any invitations now?"

She went on. "It's not just Tanya. Even Nora is also... What is a good girl like her doing being a forensic doctor? Doesn't she find it crass dealing with dead bodies every day? It's even taboo for many people, that's why they are not sending invitations to Nora anymore, either.

"But there are many things that require a woman to come forward and take care of. Take a look at the Smiths now, how many presentable women are there?

"Besides, I'm here this time because of a huge transaction!"

Joel narrowed his eyes and looked at Sue.

Sue said, "There isn't any land available for purchase in New York lately, right? The real estate business is gradually failing. The part of our family's business in the real estate hasn't produced any profits this year! But I daresay that this project of mine is definitely the most profitable in the real estate industry!"

Joel immediately understood what project Sue was talking about.

He immediately cut her off and said, "The Smiths will not brood over certain businesses. The real estate industry is not doing well anymore. It was a wise choice that we pulled out in time!"

He didn't give Sue a chance to speak, but stood up and pushed her out instead. He said, "Grandaunt Sue, we have a lot to do. Why don't you go home for now?"

Tanya watched the two of them.

Joel had always been a wily little fox. Even if he was obviously unhappy about something, he would still keep a smile on his face. He maintained a smiley disposition all year round and then decimated his enemies behind their backs.

He seldom got angry on the surface back then.

But he was actually starting to get physical now. It must be because what Sue was about to say had something to do with her.

As soon as the thought formed, Sue said, "Joel, don't push me. Isn't it for the sake of letting the Smiths profit that I'm here to talk about the project today?"

Are you going to deprive the Smiths of such huge profits just to protect your wife?"

Sue rushed up to Tanya and said, "Do you know? There is a big project in New York that all the companies are bidding for right now. The Smiths could have easily fought for it; it's all because of you that we have let this project slip by us!"

Tanya frowned and looked at Joel.

Joel's voice became even colder. "Grandaunt Sue, don't force me into taking action against

you!"

Sue, however, lifted her chin and said, "Then why don't you do it? But before you do, I still have to make this clear!"

She looked straight at Tanya and said, "This huge project was to build a courthouse on a plot of land in the suburbs! And since this building is so special, they require an engineering team with a crystal clear track record with the law! The Smiths have indeed never broken the law before even after being in business for so many years! But we now have a daughter-in-law with a murderer for a father! You've utterly ruined the Smiths' reputation! We can't bid on the project anymore just because of you!"

Tanya bit her lip when she heard this.

As for Joel, he immediately shouted, "Where's the housekeeper?!"

Lucy entered the room and said, "I'm here."

"Show Grandaunt Sue out!"

"Yes, sir."

Lucy took a step forward as she spoke. She grabbed Sue's hand right away and started to drag her toward the door.

Sue, however, sneered and said, "Joel, do you think this problem will just go away if you drive me out and stop me from talking? Even if I don't say anything about it, both of you should know that it's all because of her father that we have been barred from the project! Hah, we, the Smiths, have never

so brazenly broken the law all these years, but we have totally embarrassed ourselves this time! Are you still going to defend a wife like that?" To be honest, building a courthouse didn't bring much profit.

However, it was a representation of one's corporate reputation in the country!

It was indeed extremely unsightly that the Smiths' engineering team didn't even qualify to bid on the project.

However...

Joel refuted her. "We may not be able to win the project even if we bid for it, anyway! How can you blame it all on Tanya?"

Sue sneered, "With what all the outsiders are saying, the Smiths have utterly embarrassed themselves, yet you are still defending her! Not only is a matriarch like her unable to do anything for the Smiths, but she's even giving us a whole lot of trouble! Joel, I told you, I came here with a project! As long as you let me be the matriarch of the Smiths on the surface, I can convince the Department of Housing and Urban Development to give the Smiths a chance to participate in the bidding! Whether we make money or not doesn't matter; what matters is earning back the reputation we have lost!"

Joel frowned. He was about to speak when police sirens came from the door.

Sue's eyes lit up at once when she heard the police sirens. She pointed at Tanya and said excitedly, "Hear that? The police are here again! Have we become at constant loggerheads with the police? Tanya's father must have gotten himself in trouble again, they're here to arrest Tanya now!"

As soon as she said that, a wild and boorish voice came from the door. "Who dares to arrest my daughter?!"

Upon hearing this, the few of them looked over one after another and saw Karl striding in wearing a police uniform!

A shudder went through Sue when she heard his voice. Seeing that it was Karl walking in, Sue was reminded of the terror she had felt being dominated by him the last time, and her legs turned into jelly.

Karl was dressed in a police uniform, which covered all of his tattoos and made him look very righteous. It was just that there was no change to his simple and honest image.

As he entered, Karl grinned at Tanya and said, "I'm back."

Tanya's eyes reddened.

Joel put his arm around her shoulders. After greeting his daughter, Karl finally looked at Sue. Upon recognizing her, he frowned and said with displeasure, "You again?" Sue swallowed hard. "No, it's not me!"

Karl: ?

Sue was so terrified that she didn't dare to speak. Instead, she said to Tanya and Joel, "Um, I have something to do, so I'll be going now!"

She hurried out after speaking, upon which she spotted the police car parked at the door.

Sue became even more scared and almost fell onto the ground. She got into the car and immediately told the chauffeur to quickly drive off. When they reached the gates, she saw the butler instructing his subordinates, "Quick, close the gates. If anyone comes and asks about Mr. Joel's in-laws, just tell them that you don't know anything!"

"Yes, sir!"

The butler sighed. "He even has the guts to steal a police car. Surely Mr. Moore didn't really break out of prison again, right?"

Sue became even more scared and she didn't dare to say any more. She immediately urged the chauffeur to hurry up and drive back home.

But when she got home, the more Sue thought about it, the more scared she became.

She said to Samuel, "People like Karl Moore are all devils who kill without even batting an eyelid. Do you think he will come to take revenge against me?"

Samuel was, surprisingly, relatively calm. He replied, "I know that family well. Although they seem cold and ruthless, they are reliable... As long as you don't provoke them, they won't do anything to you."

Samuel just found Ian an eyesore, that's why he was always going against him. However, he had never harbored any thoughts of harming the Smiths.

Sue, however, said, "But I have already made an agreement with the other party. They will give the Smiths a chance to bid for the project and I will give them money! This way, I would also become the matriarch of the Smiths. With that, won't all the Smiths' little opportunities to make money be ours in the future?"

Samuel curled his lips disdainfully. "Dream on. The matriarch of the Smiths? You sure dare to dream big. With how stingy Ian is, he has all the power in the family tightly in his grasp, okay? His word is absolute in for the Smiths! Joel was personally taught and groomed by him. Do you think he will ever make you the matriarch of the Smiths? Don't even think about it!"

Seeing that even Samuel wasn't cooperating with her, Sue got anxious. "Why are you being such a loser? Haven't you ever thought of improving our family's conditions?"

She walked back and forth in the room. Then, she went out. "No, this won't do. I'm calling the cops!"

Samuel was taken aback. "What are you going crazy for?"

Sue replied, "I am a good, law-abiding citizen. Now that someone like him has broken out of jail again, I have to inform the police about it! Even if it is not for money, I am afraid that he will come over in the middle of the night and murder me! There are murder cases everywhere these days. It's not like you haven't seen the news!"

Before Samuel could recover, Sue had already left.

The forty to fifty-year-old woman was a bit chubby but didn't look swollen. She merely looked a little well-fed. Her butt twisted from side to side as she got into the car and went straight to the nearest police station. The moment she entered, she immediately said, "Officer, I'd like to make a police report! A murderer has broken out of jail and is now hiding at the Smith Manor!"

At the Smiths.

Karl didn't have the time to bother with Sue after she fled. Instead, he asked, "What project is it? I can talk to them!"

He was now a hero in the special department. Morris definitely wouldn't reject him if he asked to give the relevant departments a heads-up.

Joel smiled and replied, "No, it's fine. You've only just returned, you should take a good bath and rest instead!"

The fact that Karl had returned in the uniform showed that what Nora had said was all correct. From the looks of it, Karl's identity must have been reinstated.

The obstacle standing in the way of the Smiths would go away even without him speaking with the relevant authorities.

Upon hearing what Joel said, Karl sniffed himself. Then, he scratched his head and looked at Tanya. "Do I smell? I've been taking baths every day in the special department!"

As he spoke, he even stretched his arm towards Tanya so that she could take a sniff as well.

Tanya: "..."

She pushed Karl's arm away and sighed. "There are dumplings in the kitchen. Do you want some?"

Karl's eyes lit up. "Yes!"

Tanya walked to the kitchen straight away.

The servant in the kitchen said, "What do you need, Ma'am? Let me do it!"

"No, it's fine," replied Tanya. Then, she took out the frozen dumplings from the refrigerator and put them in the pot.

Karl came over. The servant smiled and said, "Mrs. Smith made these dumplings herself. She didn't let us help at all! You're so blessed, Mr. Moore!"

The simple-looking Karl couldn't stop chuckling

Ian came downstairs at this time.

He could get out of the wheelchair and walk with crutches by now, and his recovery was going well. When he saw Karl, he huffily asked, “Old man, why are you in my house again?”

Karl craned his neck and replied, “I don’t have a house in New York, so where my daughter is is my home!”

When Tanya saw Ian, she asked, “Dad, would you also like a plate of dumplings?”.

Ever since Joel started calling him “Dad”, Tanya had also changed her term of address for Ian.

But as soon as she called him “Dad”, Karl became jealous. “Girl, why are you calling him Dad? He’s not eating!”

Ian couldn’t help but smile. The moment the smile formed, his good looks immediately revealed themselves. He had always been an attractive man. Now that he was keeping himself well-maintained, and his cheeks had become a bit fleshier, he looked a lot younger than before. His smile was very elegant. He said, “I’ll have a plate.”

Initially, he hadn’t wanted to eat it, but just for the sake of annoying Karl, he would have a plate of dumplings, no matter what.

Karl said, “... My daughter made them for me! You are not allowed to eat any!”

Ian leaned on the crutches and sneered, “This is my house! Get out of here!”

While the two old men were arguing as if they were children, a group of police officers suddenly swarmed in through the doorway!

There were about ten officers. All of them were wearing bulletproof vests and had surrounded the living room. Ian frowned and asked, “What’s going on?” The perspiration-soaked butler came after them and replied, “Sir, I tried to intercept them, but they refuse to listen to me...”

What accompanied his words was Sue walking in from behind the policemen. She pointed at Karl and shouted, "Officer, that's him! He is a murderer! He even escaped from prison and stole your car!" Karl:"??"

Karl was still holding the bowl of dumplings that Tanya had prepared for him when the policemen surrounded him. The officer at the front looked at him warily and asked, "Who are

you?"

Karl neatened his uniform, waved, and replied, "One of you, obviously!"

Sue immediately yelled, "You mustn't believe him, officer! His affairs were all over the news just some time ago! Quick, arrest him! He had already escaped from jail once to attend his daughter's wedding!"

Someone had filmed Karl's escape from prison to attend the wedding the other time. The video had made it to the news, making him a household name in New York.

Therefore, the police officers had also heard a little about it. They looked at Karl in surprise.

Karl: "..."

He put down the bowl of dumplings, sighed, and then took out his ID from his pocket and threw it to the leading police officer from a distance.

The man flipped open the ID. Upon seeing the badge number on it, he opened up the system and keyed in his information. Karl's profile appeared at once. When he saw the words "Went undercover for 25 years. Returned to the team on XX day of XX month of XX year" among other things, he was filled with awe and respect at once. Sue was still sneering at them. "Tanya, you are too much! Hurry up and persuade your father to surrender! Don't drag the Smiths into this! You mustn't be so selfish! Now that you have become known as a murderer's daughter, it's already very hard for you to socialize in New York. You'll be breaking the law if you continue to shelter a criminal! Even if you must break the law to help your father, how can you drag the Smiths? You—".

was

Sue was very afraid of Karl, so she was hiding behind the leading policeman as she spoke. While she was speaking, though, she saw the policeman suddenly straightening his back. Then, he saluted Karl!

After that, with a wave from him, the other SWAT officers also immediately stood straight and put away their weapons. Then, the leading policeman walked up to Karl and respectfully returned his ID. "Thank you for your hard work!"

Sue: "??"

Karl waved him off. "Not at all."

After Karl put away his credentials, just as the policemen were about to leave, he suddenly said, "There are costs for you guys to respond to a call like this, right?"

Of course.

It took time for everyone to gather at the training ground, collect their equipment, and set off.

Before the leader could reply, Karl looked at Sue again and said, "You can't just respond to a call for nothing. Why not take this woman who made the false police report back with you and educate her?"

"Yes, sir!"

Karl was a retiree of the special department. Morris had even given him several medals. All the contributions he had made were all apparent on his clothes in the form of medals.

Thus, his position was much higher than the other officers'.

Upon hearing what Karl said, the officers immediately held Sue down. Dumbfounded, Sue shouted, "No! I'm not...! I didn't...! What is going on? I don't know anything at all! ..."

It was just a shame that they couldn't hear the rest of what she said as the group of policemen was very efficient. They took her with them straightaway.

After they left, Karl looked at Ian. "The Smiths suck. How come random people just waltz in so casually?"

The butler came in at this point.

To be honest, the butler had already received news of the police officers' impending arrival before they had even arrived. He had specially asked Joel whether he should let them in or

not.

The Smith Manor wasn't a place that they could enter just because they wanted to!

Joel had agreed to it at that time and instructed the Smiths' bodyguards not to get into a conflict with them.

However, Ian and Joel couldn't be bothered to explain.

After mocking them about it, Karl took his bowl of dumplings and started digging in. He even said unceremoniously, "Get a room ready for me."

Ian looked at him frostily. "Are you even planning to take up permanent residence here?"

"Of course."

Karl said, "I am now employed, so I will have to work in New York from now on. What, are you guys going to drive me away? If so, then I'll be taking both my daughter and granddaughter with me." Ian curled his lips disdainfully. "Would I be afraid of you? I just think that it's too pitiful for you to live all by yourself! Fine, fine, stay here if that's what you want!"

Chapter 549 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

Upon hearing what he said, Karl broke into a grin. He even patted the steering wheel and asked, "Is this car dashing or what?" The butler: "..."

"C'mon, cut the crap and open the door! I'm going in to look for my daughter!" Following Karl's words, the butler swallowed. He ultimately didn't dare to stop Karl from entering, so he opened the gates.

The car swayed about as Karl drove carelessly on the driveway.

In the living room.

Tanya's eyes were lowered and she kept quiet.

With a cold look on his face, Joel said, "Grandaunt Sue, I don't find my wife's status awkward at all."

Sue curled her lips disdainfully and said, "You don't have to glorify her anymore. All of New York already knows by now that her father is a murderer. This has pretty much been cemented. We also have our own contacts that we can use to find out the information we want! Tanya is not invited to any of the events in the New York circle these days. If you don't believe me, then why don't you go out and have a look yourself? Think of all the invitations that the Smiths had received when Yvonne was still around. Who is going to send the Smiths any invitations now?"

She went on. "It's not just Tanya. Even Nora is also... What is a good girl like her doing being a forensic doctor? Doesn't she find it crass dealing with dead bodies every day? It's even taboo for many people, that's why they are not sending invitations to Nora anymore, either.

"But there are many things that require a woman to come forward and take care of. Take a look at the Smiths now, how many presentable women are there?"

"Besides, I'm here this time because of a huge transaction!"

Joel narrowed his eyes and looked at Sue.

Sue said, "There isn't any land available for purchase in New York lately, right? The real estate business is gradually failing. The part of our family's business in the real estate hasn't produced any profits this year! But I daresay that this project of mine is definitely the most profitable in the real estate industry!"

Joel immediately understood what project Sue was talking about.

He immediately cut her off and said, "The Smiths will not brood over certain businesses. The real estate industry is not doing well anymore. It was a wise choice that we pulled out in time!"

He didn't give Sue a chance to speak, but stood up and pushed her out instead. He said, "Grandaunt Sue, we have a lot to do. Why don't you go home for now?"

Tanya watched the two of them.

Joel had always been a wily little fox. Even if he was obviously unhappy about something, he would still keep a smile on his face. He maintained a smiley disposition all year round and then decimated his enemies behind their backs.

He seldom got angry on the surface back then.

But he was actually starting to get physical now. It must be because what Sue was about to say had something to do with her.

As soon as the thought formed, Sue said, "Joel, don't push me. Isn't it for the sake of letting the Smiths profit that I'm here to talk about the project today? Are you going to deprive the Smiths of such huge profits just to protect your wife?"

Sue rushed up to Tanya and said, "Do you know? There is a big project in New York that all the companies are bidding for right now. The Smiths could have easily fought for it; it's all because of you that we have let this project slip by us!"

Tanya frowned and looked at Joel.

Joel's voice became even colder. "Grandaunt Sue, don't force me into taking action against

you!"

Sue, however, lifted her chin and said, "Then why don't you do it? But before you do, I still have to make this clear!"

She looked straight at Tanya and said, "This huge project was to build a courthouse on a plot of land in the suburbs! And since this building is so special, they require an engineering team with a crystal clear track record with the law! The Smiths have indeed never broken the law before even after being in business for so many years! But we now have a daughter-in-law with a murderer for a father! You've utterly ruined the Smiths' reputation! We can't bid on the project anymore just because of you!"

Tanya bit her lip when she heard this.

As for Joel, he immediately shouted, "Where's the housekeeper?!"

Lucy entered the room and said, "I'm here."

"Show Grandaunt Sue out!"

"Yes, sir."

Lucy took a step forward as she spoke. She grabbed Sue's hand right away and started to drag her toward the door.

Sue, however, sneered and said, "Joel, do you think this problem will just go away if you drive me out and stop me from talking? Even if I don't say anything about it, both of you should know that it's all because of her father that we have been barred from the project! Hah, we, the Smiths, have never so brazenly broken the law all these years, but we have totally embarrassed ourselves this time! Are you still going to defend a wife like that?" To be honest, building a courthouse didn't bring much profit.

However, it was a representation of one's corporate reputation in the country!

It was indeed extremely unsightly that the Smiths' engineering team didn't even qualify to bid on the project.

However...

Joel refuted her. "We may not be able to win the project even if we bid for it, anyway! How can you blame it all on Tanya?"

Sue sneered, "With what all the outsiders are saying, the Smiths have utterly embarrassed themselves, yet you are still defending her! Not only is a matriarch like her unable to do anything for the Smiths, but she's even giving us a whole lot of trouble! Joel, I told you, I came here with a project! As long as you let me be the matriarch of the Smiths on the surface, I can convince the Department of Housing and Urban Development to give the Smiths a chance to participate in the bidding! Whether we make money or not doesn't matter; what matters is earning back the reputation we have lost!"

Joel frowned. He was about to speak when police sirens came from the door.

Sue's eyes lit up at once when she heard the police sirens. She pointed at Tanya and said excitedly, "Hear that? The police are here again! Have we become at constant loggerheads with the police? Tanya's father must have gotten himself in trouble again, they're here to arrest Tanya now!"

As soon as she said that, a wild and boorish voice came from the door. "Who dares to arrest my daughter?!"

Upon hearing this, the few of them looked over one after another and saw Karl striding in wearing a police uniform!

A shudder went through Sue when she heard his voice. Seeing that it was Karl walking in, Sue was reminded of the terror she had felt being dominated by him the last time, and her legs turned into jelly.

Karl was dressed in a police uniform, which covered all of his tattoos and made him look very righteous. It was just that there was no change to his simple and honest image.

As he entered, Karl grinned at Tanya and said, "I'm back."

Tanya's eyes reddened.

Joel put his arm around her shoulders. After greeting his daughter, Karl finally looked at Sue. Upon recognizing her, he frowned and said with displeasure, "You again?" Sue swallowed hard. "No, it's not me!"

Karl: ?

Sue was so terrified that she didn't dare to speak. Instead, she said to Tanya and Joel, "Um, I have something to do, so I'll be going now!"

She hurried out after speaking, upon which she spotted the police car parked at the door.

Sue became even more scared and almost fell onto the ground. She got into the car and immediately told the chauffeur to quickly drive off. When they reached the gates, she saw the butler instructing his subordinates, "Quick, close the gates. If anyone comes and asks about Mr. Joel's in-laws, just tell them that you don't know anything!"

"Yes, sir!"

The butler sighed. "He even has the guts to steal a police car. Surely Mr. Moore didn't really break out of prison again, right?"

Sue became even more scared and she didn't dare to say any more. She immediately urged the chauffeur to hurry up and drive back home.

But when she got home, the more Sue thought about it, the more scared she became.

She said to Samuel, "People like Karl Moore are all devils who kill without even batting an eyelid. Do you think he will come to take revenge against me?"

Samuel was, surprisingly, relatively calm. He replied, "I know that family well. Although they seem cold and ruthless, they are reliable... As long as you don't provoke them, they won't do anything to you."

Samuel just found Ian an eyesore, that's why he was always going against him. However, he had never harbored any thoughts of harming the Smiths.

Sue, however, said, "But I have already made an agreement with the other party. They will give the Smiths a chance to bid for the project and I will give them money! This way, I would also become the matriarch of the Smiths. With that, won't all the Smiths' little opportunities to make money be ours in the future?"

Samuel curled his lips disdainfully. "Dream on. The matriarch of the Smiths? You sure dare to dream big. With how stingy Ian is, he has all the power in the family tightly in his grasp, okay? His word is absolute in for the Smiths! Joel was personally taught and groomed by him. Do you think he will ever make you the matriarch of the Smiths? Don't even think about it!"

Seeing that even Samuel wasn't cooperating with her, Sue got anxious. "Why are you being such a loser? Haven't you ever thought of improving our family's conditions?"

She walked back and forth in the room. Then, she went out. "No, this won't do. I'm calling the cops!"

Samuel was taken aback. "What are you going crazy for?"

Sue replied, "I am a good, law-abiding citizen. Now that someone like him has broken out of jail again, I have to inform the police about it! Even if it is not for money, I am afraid that he will come over in the middle of the night and murder me! There are murder cases everywhere these days. It's not like you haven't seen the news!"

Before Samuel could recover, Sue had already left.

The forty to fifty-year-old woman was a bit chubby but didn't look swollen. She merely looked a little well-fed. Her butt twisted from side to side as she got into the car and went straight to the nearest police station. The moment she entered, she immediately said, "Officer, I'd like to make a police report! A murderer has broken out of jail and is now hiding at the Smith Manor!"

At the Smiths.

Karl didn't have the time to bother with Sue after she fled. Instead, he asked, "What project is it? I can talk to them!"

He was now a hero in the special department. Morris definitely wouldn't reject him if he asked to give the relevant departments a heads-up.

Joel smiled and replied, "No, it's fine. You've only just returned, you should take a good bath and rest instead!"

The fact that Karl had returned in the uniform showed that what Nora had said was all correct. From the looks of it, Karl's identity must have been reinstated.

The obstacle standing in the way of the Smiths would go away even without him speaking with the relevant authorities.

Upon hearing what Joel said, Karl sniffed himself. Then, he scratched his head and looked at Tanya. "Do I smell? I've been taking baths every day in the special department!"

As he spoke, he even stretched his arm towards Tanya so that she could take a sniff as well.

Tanya: "..."

She pushed Karl's arm away and sighed. "There are dumplings in the kitchen. Do you want some?"

Karl's eyes lit up. "Yes!"

Tanya walked to the kitchen straight away.

The servant in the kitchen said, "What do you need, Ma'am? Let me do it!"

"No, it's fine," replied Tanya. Then, she took out the frozen dumplings from the refrigerator and put them in the pot.

Karl came over. The servant smiled and said, "Mrs. Smith made these dumplings herself. She didn't let us help at all! You're so blessed, Mr. Moore!"

The simple-looking Karl couldn't stop chuckling

Ian came downstairs at this time.

He could get out of the wheelchair and walk with crutches by now, and his recovery was going well. When he saw Karl, he huffily asked, "Old man, why are you in my house again?"

Karl craned his neck and replied, "I don't have a house in New York, so where my daughter is is my home!"

When Tanya saw Ian, she asked, "Dad, would you also like a plate of dumplings?"

Ever since Joel started calling him "Dad", Tanya had also changed her term of address for Ian.

But as soon as she called him "Dad", Karl became jealous. "Girl, why are you calling him Dad? He's not eating!"

Ian couldn't help but smile. The moment the smile formed, his good looks immediately revealed themselves. He had always been an attractive man. Now that he was keeping himself well-maintained, and his cheeks had become a bit fleshier, he looked a lot younger than before. His smile was very elegant. He said, "I'll have a plate."

Initially, he hadn't wanted to eat it, but just for the sake of annoying Karl, he would have a plate of dumplings, no matter what.

Karl said, "... My daughter made them for me! You are not allowed to eat any!"

Ian leaned on the crutches and sneered, "This is my house! Get out of here!"

While the two old men were arguing as if they were children, a group of police officers suddenly swarmed in through the doorway!

There were about ten officers. All of them were wearing bulletproof vests and had surrounded the living room. Ian frowned and asked, "What's going on?" The perspiration-soaked butler came after them and replied, "Sir, I tried to intercept them, but they refuse to listen to me..."

What accompanied his words was Sue walking in from behind the policemen. She pointed at Karl and shouted, "Officer, that's him! He is a murderer! He even escaped from prison and stole your car!" Karl:"??"

Karl was still holding the bowl of dumplings that Tanya had prepared for him when the policemen surrounded him. The officer at the front looked at him warily and asked, "Who are

you?"

Karl neatened his uniform, waved, and replied, "One of you, obviously!"

Sue immediately yelled, "You mustn't believe him, officer! His affairs were all over the news just some time ago! Quick, arrest him! He had already escaped from jail once to attend his daughter's wedding!"

Someone had filmed Karl's escape from prison to attend the wedding the other time. The video had made it to the news, making him a household name in New York.

Therefore, the police officers had also heard a little about it. They looked at Karl in surprise.

Karl: "..."

He put down the bowl of dumplings, sighed, and then took out his ID from his pocket and threw it to the leading police officer from a distance.

The man flipped open the ID. Upon seeing the badge number on it, he opened up the system and keyed in his information. Karl's profile appeared at once. When he saw the words "Went undercover for 25 years. Returned to the team on XX day of XX month of XX year" among other things, he was filled with

awe and respect at once. Sue was still sneering at them. “Tanya, you are too much! Hurry up and persuade your father to surrender! Don’t drag the Smiths into this! You mustn’t be so selfish! Now that you have become known as a murderer’s daughter, it’s already very hard for you to socialize in New York. You’ll be breaking the law if you continue to shelter a criminal! Even if you must break the law to help your father, how can you drag the Smiths? You—”.

was

Sue was very afraid of Karl, so she was hiding behind the leading policeman as she spoke. While she was speaking, though, she saw the policeman suddenly straightening his back. Then, he saluted Karl!

After that, with a wave from him, the other SWAT officers also immediately stood straight and put away their weapons. Then, the leading policeman walked up to Karl and respectfully returned his ID. “Thank you for your hard work!”

Sue: “??”

Karl waved him off. “Not at all.”

After Karl put away his credentials, just as the policemen were about to leave, he suddenly said, “There are costs for you guys to respond to a call like this, right?”

Of course.

It took time for everyone to gather at the training ground, collect their equipment, and set off.

Before the leader could reply, Karl looked at Sue again and said, “You can’t just respond to a call for nothing. Why not take this woman who made the false police report back with you and educate her?”

“Yes, sir!”

Karl was a retiree of the special department. Morris had even given him several medals. All the contributions he had made were all apparent on his clothes in the form of medals.

Thus, his position was much higher than the other officers’.

Upon hearing what Karl said, the officers immediately held Sue down. Dumbfounded, Sue shouted, “No! I’m not...! I didn’t...! What is going on? I don’t know anything at all! ...”

It was just a shame that they couldn’t hear the rest of what she said as the group of policemen was very efficient. They took her with them straightaway.

After they left, Karl looked at Ian. “The Smiths suck. How come random people just waltz in so casually?”

The butler came in at this point.

To be honest, the butler had already received news of the police officers’ impending arrival before they had even arrived. He had specially asked Joel whether he should let them in or

not.

The Smith Manor wasn’t a place that they could enter just because they wanted to!

Joel had agreed to it at that time and instructed the Smiths’ bodyguards not to get into a conflict with them.

However, Ian and Joel couldn’t be bothered to explain.

After mocking them about it, Karl took his bowl of dumplings and started digging in. He even said unceremoniously, “Get a room ready for

me.”

Ian looked at him frostily. “Are you even planning to take up permanent residence here?”

“Of course.”

Karl said, “I am now employed, so I will have to work in New York from now on. What, are you guys going to drive me away? If so, then I’ll be taking both my daughter and granddaughter with me.” Ian curled his lips disdainfully. “Would I be afraid of you? I just think that it’s too pitiful for you to live all by yourself! Fine, fine, stay here if that’s what you want!”

Chapter 550 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

The forty to fifty-year-old woman was a bit chubby but didn't look swollen. She merely looked a little well-fed. Her butt twisted from side to side as she got into the car and went straight to the nearest police station. The moment she entered, she immediately said, "Officer, I'd like to make a police report! A murderer has broken out of jail and is now hiding at the Smith Manor!"

At the Smiths.

Karl didn't have the time to bother with Sue after she fled. Instead, he asked, "What project is it? I can talk to them!"

He was now a hero in the special department. Morris definitely wouldn't reject him if he asked to give the relevant departments a heads-up.

Joel smiled and replied, "No, it's fine. You've only just returned, you should take a good bath and rest instead!"

The fact that Karl had returned in the uniform showed that what Nora had said was all correct. From the looks of it, Karl's identity must have been reinstated.

The obstacle standing in the way of the Smiths would go away even without him speaking with the relevant authorities.

Upon hearing what Joel said, Karl sniffed himself. Then, he scratched his head and looked at Tanya. "Do I smell? I've been taking baths every day in the special department!"

As he spoke, he even stretched his arm towards Tanya so that she could take a sniff as well.

Tanya: "..."

She pushed Karl's arm away and sighed. "There are dumplings in the kitchen. Do you want some?"

Karl's eyes lit up. "Yes!"

Tanya walked to the kitchen straight away.

The servant in the kitchen said, "What do you need, Ma'am? Let me do it!"

“No, it’s fine,” replied Tanya. Then, she took out the frozen dumplings from the refrigerator and put them in the pot.

Karl came over. The servant smiled and said, “Mrs. Smith made these dumplings herself. She didn’t let us help at all! You’re so blessed, Mr. Moore!”

The simple-looking Karl couldn’t stop chuckling

Ian came downstairs at this time.

He could get out of the wheelchair and walk with crutches by now, and his recovery was going well. When he saw Karl, he huffily asked, “Old man, why are you in my house again?”

Karl craned his neck and replied, “I don’t have a house in New York, so where my daughter is is my home!”

When Tanya saw Ian, she asked, “Dad, would you also like a plate of dumplings?”.

Ever since Joel started calling him “Dad”, Tanya had also changed her term of address for Ian.

But as soon as she called him “Dad”, Karl became jealous. “Girl, why are you calling him Dad? He’s not eating!”

Ian couldn’t help but smile. The moment the smile formed, his good looks immediately revealed themselves. He had always been an attractive man. Now that he was keeping himself well-maintained, and his cheeks had become a bit fleshier, he looked a lot younger than before. His smile was very elegant. He said, “I’ll have a plate.”

Initially, he hadn’t wanted to eat it, but just for the sake of annoying Karl, he would have a plate of dumplings, no matter what.

Karl said, “... My daughter made them for me! You are not allowed to eat any!”

Ian leaned on the crutches and sneered, “This is my house! Get out of here!”

While the two old men were arguing as if they were children, a group of police officers suddenly swarmed in through the doorway!

There were about ten officers. All of them were wearing bulletproof vests and had surrounded the living room. Ian frowned and asked, "What's going on?" The perspiration-soaked butler came after them and replied, "Sir, I tried to intercept them, but they refuse to listen to me..."

What accompanied his words was Sue walking in from behind the policemen. She pointed at Karl and shouted, "Officer, that's him! He is a murderer! He even escaped from prison and stole your car!" Karl:"??"

Karl was still holding the bowl of dumplings that Tanya had prepared for him when the policemen surrounded him. The officer at the front looked at him warily and asked, "Who are

you?"

Karl neatened his uniform, waved, and replied, "One of you, obviously!"

Sue immediately yelled, "You mustn't believe him, officer! His affairs were all over the news just some time ago! Quick, arrest him! He had already escaped from jail once to attend his daughter's wedding!"

Someone had filmed Karl's escape from prison to attend the wedding the other time. The video had made it to the news, making him a household name in New York.

Therefore, the police officers had also heard a little about it. They looked at Karl in surprise.

Karl: "..."

He put down the bowl of dumplings, sighed, and then took out his ID from his pocket and threw it to the leading police officer from a distance.

The man flipped open the ID. Upon seeing the badge number on it, he opened up the system and keyed in his information. Karl's profile appeared at once. When he saw the words "Went undercover for 25 years. Returned to the team on XX day of XX month of XX year" among other things, he was filled with awe and respect at once. Sue was still sneering at them. "Tanya, you are too much! Hurry up and persuade your father to surrender! Don't drag the Smiths into this! You mustn't be so selfish! Now that you have become known as a murderer's daughter, it's already very hard for you to socialize in New York.

You'll be breaking the law if you continue to shelter a criminal! Even if you must break the law to help your father, how can you drag the Smiths? You—".

was

Sue was very afraid of Karl, so she was hiding behind the leading policeman as she spoke. While she was speaking, though, she saw the policeman suddenly straightening his back. Then, he saluted Karl!

After that, with a wave from him, the other SWAT officers also immediately stood straight and put away their weapons. Then, the leading policeman walked up to Karl and respectfully returned his ID. "Thank you for your hard work!"

Sue: "??"

Karl waved him off. "Not at all."

After Karl put away his credentials, just as the policemen were about to leave, he suddenly said, "There are costs for you guys to respond to a call like this, right?"

Of course.

It took time for everyone to gather at the training ground, collect their equipment, and set off.

Before the leader could reply, Karl looked at Sue again and said, "You can't just respond to a call for nothing. Why not take this woman who made the false police report back with you and educate her?"

"Yes, sir!"

Karl was a retiree of the special department. Morris had even given him several medals. All the contributions he had made were all apparent on his clothes in the form of medals.

Thus, his position was much higher than the other officers'.

Upon hearing what Karl said, the officers immediately held Sue down. Dumbfounded, Sue shouted, "No! I'm not...! I didn't...! What is going on? I don't know anything at all! ..."

It was just a shame that they couldn't hear the rest of what she said as the group of policemen was very efficient. They took her with them straightaway.

After they left, Karl looked at Ian. "The Smiths suck. How come random people just waltz in so casually?"

The butler came in at this point.

To be honest, the butler had already received news of the police officers' impending arrival before they had even arrived. He had specially asked Joel whether he should let them in or

not.

The Smith Manor wasn't a place that they could enter just because they wanted to!

Joel had agreed to it at that time and instructed the Smiths' bodyguards not to get into a conflict with them.

However, Ian and Joel couldn't be bothered to explain.

After mocking them about it, Karl took his bowl of dumplings and started digging in. He even said unceremoniously, "Get a room ready for

me."

Ian looked at him frostily. "Are you even planning to take up permanent residence here?"

"Of course."

Karl said, "I am now employed, so I will have to work in New York from now on. What, are you guys going to drive me away? If so, then I'll be taking both my daughter and granddaughter with me." Ian curled his lips disdainfully.

"Would I be afraid of you? I just think that it's too pitiful for you to live all by yourself! Fine, fine, stay here if that's what you want!"

Chapter 551 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

Seeing the two of them bickering, Joel and Tanya looked at each other. Earlier, Tanya had no father.

Ian had also given up on life and sought death.

But now, it seemed like everything was developing for the better...

Nora woke up after just 48 hours this time.

Firstly, it was because she had already made up more than thirty hours of her sleep debt previously. Secondly, it was because she had to go to the hospital to visit Quentin. Although the bone adhesion balm was great, it was necessary to reapply it every other week.

Moreover, she had to personally see to it because the application of the balm had to be accompanied by acupuncture.

When she stretched, she saw that both Cherry and Pete were also on her bed and taking a nap with her.

Everyone who should know about Cherry and Pete's identities was already aware by now, so Pete had cut his hair short while Cherry was slowly growing out her hair.

The two little fellows' mouths were slightly open, and they looked really cute asleep.

While she was looking at them, Pete suddenly opened his eyes.

Although his eyes still looked a little dazed, he quickly recovered. When he saw that she was awake, a touch of a smile formed on the little boy's face.

He rubbed his eyes and sat up. "Mommy, do you want a glass of water?"

Nora had been asleep for an extended period of time. Even though she had been injected with nutritional fluids, her throat was still parched and dry. She replied hoarsely, "Yeah."

Pete slipped off the bed at once. He was about to go out and pour her a glass of water when the door opened. Justin pushed the door open and walked in with a glass of water and a bowl of plain oatmeal. "I thought you might have woken up when I heard sounds coming from the room. Here, have some water and oatmeal."

Nora: "..."

She thought of how she always saw the three of them right after she woke up during the last two times she fell comatose. She felt a little touched.

Her cell phone beeped just as she finished the oatmeal. She picked it up to see that it was a message from Brenda.

The message she had sent a day ago was: “Johnson has been tried and sentenced to death. He will be executed immediately. Most of the money that Karl gave him over the years has also been recovered, but there’s nothing to be done about the portion that has been spent.”

The message she had sent just now was: ‘Are you awake?’

Nora replied: ‘Yeah.’

Brenda called her at once.

When Nora answered, an agitated Brenda said, “Hurry over to the special department, Nora! Ruth has managed to get those people to talk after using the plans that Black Cat drew up! As it turns out, the mysterious organization really is related to your mother! The situation is very disadvantageous for you right now!”

Hearing this, Nora narrowed her eyes at once and said, “Okay, I’m on my way.”

Chapter 597 Interrogation Results!

After hanging up the phone, Nora stroked Pete’s head. Then, she looked at the sleeping Cherry and whispered, “Look after Cherry. Don’t let her play games all day.”

Pete nodded seriously and replied, “Okay.”

Nora then got up, changed, and went out.

Justin drove her there.

Nora was in the passenger seat. On the way to the special department, she suddenly thought of Trueman. She opened her chat record with him and found that he still hadn’t answered the question that she asked him the last time.

Nora asked again: 'Who plotted my pregnancy?'

The person who had managed to plot her pregnancy must also be capable of drugging Justin. This was definitely no simple person.

Trueman didn't reply to her right away.

Nora frowned.

As if he could sense her emotions, Justin suddenly said, "No matter what happens, it has nothing to do with you."

Taken aback, Nora turned to look at him.

Justin then said, "The previous generation's affairs have nothing to do with us. Even if your mother has really done something, it has nothing to do with you."

Nora lowered her eyes.

After a while, she nodded.

To be honest, she had already seen it coming. Just like what Morris had said at the beginning, he had also suspected Yvette of being involved in the production of the gene serum. Back then, on the grounds of treating someone's illness, Yvette had escaped after she left the police station.

With that in mind, she arrived at the special department.

As soon as she entered, she noticed that the way the people there looked at her had changed a little.

Nora frowned.

At this moment, Brenda rushed out, grabbed her, and took her straight to her office. After entering, Brenda closed the door, blocking out the gazes and gossips of the people outside. When she looked back behind her, she saw that Nora was already seated on the sofa in her office.

Brenda said, "Excuse me, Nora, she is already starting to bully you. Why are you still so calm?!"

Nora raised her eyebrows. "Alright, tell me, how did she bully me?"

Brenda sat in front of her and explained, "She has already made them talk. Those people are saying that your mother, Yvette Anderson, was a member of the mysterious organization! On top of that, her status in there was pretty high!"

Nora nodded. "And then?"

Brenda sighed. "All the bodyguards who were arrested are saying the same thing. They came back to the States this time to look for your mother! They even said that..."

Brenda glanced at her and went on. "... that you are also involved in this. They said that you are their undercover agent."

Following what she said, the door to Brenda's office was pushed open. A few people from the special department stood outside, all of them staring at Nora.

Brenda's expression changed at once. She looked at them harshly and demanded, "What do you think you're doing? Are you staging a rebellion?"

The few of them hesitated for a moment. Then, they said, "Captain Brenda, it's like this. The suspects have said that Nora is their undercover agent..."

Brenda sneered, "And you believe them?"

They sighed and replied, "We don't believe them, either, but according to the regulations, we have to ask her a few questions."

Brenda let out a "hmp". "What kind of questions? Don't you know what she has done for the special department? Two days ago, it was none other than Nora who exposed Johnson's conspiracy here and allowed one of our undercover comrades to return to the light. It was also her who let you people know who the more reliable one between Captain Johnson and Captain Ford is! But now you're actually running over to interrogate her? Also, have you people asked Captain Ford for permission to interrogate her?"

Reprimanded by Brenda, none of them dared to speak.

At this moment, a voice reached them. "Don't be mad, Captain Brenda. Everyone is just trying to do their jobs..."

The few of them stepped aside, upon which Ruth walked over from behind.

Ruth had been very popular in the special department recently because of the interrogation plan that she and Black Cat had designed. Everyone had become a believer of her.

In addition, all of them had interrogated the suspects for many days—in fact, some of them had even started to employ torture methods yet none of them had managed to make the bodyguards talk. Despite that, Ruth's interrogation methods had easily made them talk, which gave everyone a new perception of her interrogation abilities.

Originally, because of the Johnson incident, everyone had distanced themselves from Ruth somewhat. However, everyone here admired capable people.

Ruth's ability had made everyone's fondness for her grow exponentially.

Moreover, because the interrogation plan was designed by Black Cat and her, Morris had left her in charge of all interrogation matters.

Ruth looked at the two of them, a smile still on her face. Her dimples made her look like a little girl next door.

Brenda stared at her. "What? You want to interrogate Nora too? Are you worthy of that?" Ruth lowered her eyes. "How would I dare to do that? I know Ms. Smith's status in the special department is special, and also know very much just how much Captain Ford values her, so how would I possibly dare to interrogate her?"

"Then hurry up and get the hell out of here!" Brenda shouted sharply.

Ruth sighed. "Captain Brenda, all the bodyguards are now saying that Yvette Anderson was the second-in-command in the special department back then. She was also involved in the development of the gene serum and other issues. All of them came to the States just to search for her! Moreover, they also said that she is in possession of all the theories and mechanics of the gene serum! Yvette Anderson alone can establish another mysterious organization!"

Brenda sneered, "So? Yvette Anderson is dead!"

Ruth looked at Nora. "But her daughter is still alive."

Brenda immediately said, “I didn’t know that the special department’s principles involve imposing parents’ crimes onto their children? Even the children of murderers have to be arrested, right?”

Ruth sighed and looked at her helplessly. “As I said, Captain Brenda, we will not be arresting Ms. Smith. We just want to summon her to answer a few of our questions. Isn’t it in her interest to clear her of all suspicions as soon as possible?”

To be honest, according to the rules and regulations, Ruth’s approach was appropriate. She occupied the moral high ground this time.

On the contrary, Brenda’s interception at the moment was a bit unreasonable.

As Yvette’s only daughter, even if Nora was not involved with the mysterious organization, she was obligated to assist the special department in their investigations.

But... when Ruth became the interrogator, there was no way Brenda would allow Nora to suffer such grievances. She was about to say more when Nora got up and said, “I want to interrogate the bodyguards.”

Ruth and the others were stunned.

A contemptuous smile immediately formed on Ruth’s countenance. At once, she said, “What do you mean by that, Ms. Smith? I can understand if you suspect that my proposal is problematic, but this proposal was designed by Black Cat and me. Are you saying that you doubt Black Cat’s interrogation abilities?”

She was exactly the one that Nora was suspicious of! She narrowed her eyes and said, “I have never doubted Black Cat’s abilities.”

Only then did Ruth nod. “In that case, you don’t need to interrogate them. Captain Brenda, if you really refuse to let us take her away, that’s okay too. I will ask her a few questions right now and right in front of you. Surely that would do, right?”

Brenda looked at Nora.

Nora stared at everyone outside.

She knew that even she herself would probably have doubted someone in her position, let alone them.

Her mother was a member of the mysterious organization. Even if she wasn't, what was certain at the moment was that she was undoubtedly connected to the mysterious organization!

On top of that, she was being so mysterious. They definitely wouldn't fully trust her.

She nodded. "Ask away."

As expected of someone who once dared to say on a public forum that Black Cat's interrogation methods were problematic, Ruth was certainly skilled when it came to interrogation methods. She went straight to the crux of the matter and asked, "Ms. Smith, I'd like to ask, do you have any impression of your mother?" Nora remained seated on Brenda's sofa, her posture like a big boss. Her voice was cool and crisp as she slowly replied, "If one could retain their memories from when they were a six-month-old baby, then perhaps I might still have had an impression of her."

Yvette had died a few months after she was born. How would she possibly have any impression of her?

Ruth then asked, "Did she leave you anything?"

Yes, an audio recording.

However, Nora lowered her eyes. She didn't want them to know the content of the recording.

Besides, she was certain that there was nothing related to the case in the recording. She looked straight at Ruth and answered, "Yes, but it has nothing to do with the case."

Ruth's voice instantly turned stern and severe. "Ms. Smith, please cooperate with our investigation! We will decide whether or not it has anything to do with the case after we verify it. Please tell us what your mother left you and where it is!"

Nora looked straight at her.

Ruth, however, was not afraid. She continued to stare at her as well.

Nora lowered her eyes.

Suddenly, it occurred to her that the Grays had wanted Anthony to marry her even after she became pregnant back then. They must have wanted something that her mother had left behind, right?

Later, Anthony had demanded the small pharmaceutical company that her mother had left behind. She had gone to the company premises and searched it before, though, but she hadn't found anything useful.

And now, Ruth was asking her if her mother had left her anything...

Although she knew that this was a step in the interrogation process and was also a necessary procedure; had it been someone else who had asked her that question, she might not have thought too much into it. But if it was Ruth...

as

Why was she getting the feeling that Ruth was also trying to sound her out to find out what that thing was?!

Nora did not speak.

The atmosphere suddenly died down.

Even Brenda looked at Nora and said, "Nora, if it's not very important, why don't you show it to them?"

"No,"

Nora replied, "This involves my privacy. It is also my personal belonging. I have the right to refuse to show it to anyone."

She sounded very firm. Even if she were to present the audio recording, she would only let Morris listen to

it.

Brenda fell silent for a while. Then, without any hesitation, she chose to stand in front of her. She faced Ruth and said, "Nora does indeed have the right to do that."

Ruth, however, said aggressively, "Finding the roots of the mysterious organization and taking all of them down in one fell swoop is what matters the most right now. Ms. Smith, as a member of the special department, can't you just cooperate with us?"

She spoke as if Nora would be the special department's sinner if she did not cooperate with them.

The others also looked at her.

Ruth went on. "Also, don't you find your past very weird? How did you meet Dr. Silvester Zabe when you grew up in California? And how did you learn everything you know about surgery? Dr. Zabe is in New York; surely he couldn't have run all the way to California to take you as his disciple, right?!"

Why not...

It wasn't just Silvester but also Quinn and...

Nora cast her eyes down and said nothing.

Ruth went on. "In addition, you came to New York at a time that is really too coincidental. We have already done the calculations. Not long after you came, Caleb Gray also arrived. After Gray came, Trueman Yale brought his bodyguards with him and came here too. Since then, Yale has been in constant contact with you. May I know why this is?!" Every word Ruth spoke was insinuating that there was something between her and Trueman.

Nora cast her eyes down and sneered, "If it's about that, you can ask Captain Ford about it."

She had always kept Morris in the loop about her communication with Trueman.

However, Ruth said, "Are you planning to have Captain Ford protect you? What bad timing, though, because something came up, he is out today. Therefore, you must explain this clearly today. Otherwise, I'm afraid you won't be able to leave the special department." After Ruth spoke very aggressively, she stepped aside. At once, a group of SWAT officers from the special department came forward from behind her.

Brenda frowned. "Ruth, what is the meaning of this?"

Ruth adopted a very aggressive attitude and replied, "Captain Brenda, I am in charge of all interrogation matters. Captain Ford has also given me the right to act according to my will! Now that Nora is involved with the key figures of the case, she can only be released after she has been thoroughly interrogated. Otherwise, we have firm grounds to believe that she has relations to the mysterious organization!"

Brenda went forward and stopped right in front of Nora. "Try taking another step forward! I'm going to see which one of you has the guts to take her to the interrogation room when I'm standing right here?!"

"We won't take her away."

Ruth said, "We will interrogate her right here in your office. Give it some good thought, Ms. Smith. We will only be able to trust you if you hand over what your mother has left you!"

After speaking, she took a step back and left straightaway.

Brenda frowned and looked at the SWAT officers at the door. She knew that they were there to monitor them.

Infuriated, she whipped out her cell phone at once and said, "I will call Captain Ford right now and get him to come back!" Unfortunately, after she took out her cell phone, she realized that there was no signal at all.

She was stunned for a moment. Then, she suddenly realized what was happening. "F*ck! They actually jammed the signal in my office?!"

She looked at Nora and said, "Two days ago, when you were in a deep sleep, Captain Ford received a call for help from the border. Someone who appears to be from the mysterious organization has allegedly shown up there, so he took some men with him and immediately went over as reinforcement. Before he left, because Ruth looked like she was doing a decent job of interrogating the suspects, Captain Ford temporarily gave her the rights to interrogation. But I didn't expect that she would actually start targeting you!"

Brenda went out with her cell phone at once. She said, "Wait for me here, Nora. I'll go out and find a signal and call Captain Ford! I'll make him come back right away. Even if he can't, I will make him call the department and release you!"

Nora, however, leaned back on the sofa lazily and stared at the ceiling.

Even if they couldn't get him on the phone, Morris would have to come back the next day anyway.

No biggie, she would just sleep the day away!

After Brenda left her office, she went to the special department's entrance. But when she dialed Morris' number, she found that his cell phone had been switched off.

She broke into a frown.

When she turned to go back, she found the SWAT officers blocking her way.

Brenda narrowed her eyes and stared at the two of them. "How dare you stop me?"

The two replied, "Captain Brenda, we are in the process of interrogating Nora Smith at the moment. You are not from the interrogation unit, so you are not allowed to enter your office."

Brenda immediately sneered, "Is that so?"

She rolled up her sleeves at once and said, "Let's see if you two can stop me, then!"

Then, she went on the offensive right away.

In no time, she had flipped the two officers onto the floor. Only then did Brenda dust her hands off and continue walking forward.

However, the other people at the door blocked her way once more. Brenda stared at them. "Are you sure you want to go against me?"

The few of them looked at one another. At last, they sighed and said, "Captain Brenda, we were assigned this task! We will unconditionally obey all orders related to interrogation!"

Brenda: "!!"

She was livid. She let out an icy laugh and said, "Fine. Then you guys can come and try me!" But as soon as she said that, Nora's calm and dispassionate voice traveled over. "Forget it."

Taken aback, Brenda looked at her.

With the SWAT officers in between them, Nora said to her, "You will only be detained along with me if you come back. It's more comfortable outside. Why don't you go home for now?"

"You have been detained? How does Ruth have the right to detain you?!"

Nora shrugged. "Who knows?"

Brenda took a deep breath, turned, and started walking out. "I'll go and look for Justin right away, Nora!"

Seeing that Brenda had left, Nora returned to the room.

She closed the curtains and looked at Brenda's white sofa.

That woman sure knew how to enjoy life. There was even a white fluffy blanket on the sofa that suited lying down just right. Nora could almost imagine Brenda's lazy and charming appearance as she lay down on it. She shook her head, walked over, and lay down.

She would just catch up on sleep.

In the other room, Ruth stared at the monitor showing what was happening in Brenda's office.

The surveillance cameras were newly-installed, but she could already see Nora lying on the sofa.

She bit her lip. Suddenly, she said to the person next to her, "Go there and do this..."

When she was done speaking, a hesitant look came over the countenance of the person next to her. "Isn't that kinda inappropriate, Ruth? Nora is also a member of the special department after all."

Ruth looked at him at once. "Do you still think of her as part of the special department? Don't forget, her mother is the backbone of the mysterious

organization! If it weren't for her mother, the gene serum would never have emerged into the world! How many people have died because of the gene serum all these years? And how many children did they kidnap for human experiments back then?!"

Ruth gritted her teeth hatefully. "More than twenty years ago, as many as a thousand children had gone missing in the country. It was only in the end that it was discovered that they had been captured by the mysterious organization. It was only after they conducted brutal and inhumane experiments on the children that the gene serum was created! The members of the mysterious organization are simply devoid of all conscience! All these years, in order to capture the mysterious organization, how many of our comrades have we sacrificed? Now that Nora Smith holds clues to the mysterious organization, why should she be allowed to keep mum about it? Just do what I say! I will bear all the consequences!"

The person felt that Ruth was right, yet also not.

For a while, he didn't know what to say. In the end, he could only say, "... Alright, I guess.'

Elsewhere, Nora was lying on the sofa.

While she was resting, someone suddenly rushed into the room.

Nora opened her eyes to see a few people from the special department. They took a lamp and switched it on with a loud snap. After the lamp was switched on, piercing light illuminated the whole room, making it as bright as day!

Nora frowned.

She knew that this was an interrogation tactic. High-intensity light like this would irritate people and make them uncomfortable. Even if they closed their eyes, they wouldn't be able to fall asleep.

She clicked her tongue coldly.

So, was Ruth planning to use these interrogation tactics on her?

She raised her eyebrows and looked at the person who had switched on the lamp. The person glanced at her and tried to persuade her. "Ms. Smith, why don't you show us what your mother left you? Don't try to tough it out

anymore. Even if Captain Ford comes back, he still has to act according to the regulations!”

Nora replied detachedly, “No.”

The man sighed. He could only leave the room.

At the door, Ruth stood there and looked at her with a smile. “Ms. Smith, we have no choice but to do this. After all, this is a standard tactic. I hope you can understand! Of course, if you hand it over now, I can remove the lamp at once.” Nora lowered her eyes and said nothing.

Seeing how she looked as if she didn’t want to talk, Ruth said, “Since you haven’t decided to make the right decision yet, you can continue to give it more thought!”

After speaking, she left and closed the door with a bang.

Ruth had already asked around a long time ago

-sleep was the most important thing to Nora. Now that she couldn’t sleep, she would definitely be exceptionally anxious while being detained in there!

In the room.

Nora leaned on the sofa and stared at the lamp.

The light was very glaring. After she closed her eyes for a while, she found that she really couldn’t quite fall asleep. Moreover, with such a strong light stimulating her senses, she started to become a little irritated, making her seem a little impatient.

She decided not to put up with this anymore.

Initially, Nora had thought that even though it was obvious that Ruth was making things difficult for her, she was indeed acting according to regulations.

After interrogating the suspects and finding out that the mysterious organization’s ultimate mastermind was Yvette, she should indeed interrogate Nora.

But Nora was not just anybody. She was internal personnel of the special department.

Even if they wanted to interrogate her, they should have asked Morris for permission first. After all, she was someone whom Morris had specially recruited!

When Ruth detained her and forbade her from leaving, she could understand and think of it as Ruth trying to prevent her from taking the opportunity to escape in case she really was involved with the mysterious organization.

Therefore, she had intended to cooperate with them in the beginning.

After all, once Morris returned, the truth would come to light.

That was why she had comforted Brenda and told her to leave just now.

But Ruth was actually installing a light like that in her room?

What kind of attitude was that?

Even in a normal interrogation, they should not be employing torture methods when there was no evidence of her involvement with the mysterious organization!

Nora closed her eyes and experienced for herself the pain and agony of someone under interrogation. Ten minutes later, she ultimately decided not to go against herself anymore.

Thus, she picked up her cell phone, tapped away on it a little, and sent out a signal from the room whose signal had been jammed. About five minutes later.

The SWAT officers from the special department looked warily at Nora who had exited the room.

She stood there, thin and frail and standing at a height of 5'7, yet all the men felt pressured by her presence.

“What’s going on?”

Ruth came over and asked. At the sight of Nora, her pupils shrank. “A-are you actually thinking of escaping? Nora, do you have a guilty conscience?!”

Nora flexed her wrists a little. “No, I just think that getting this over with quickly would be better.”

Ruth was taken aback. “What do you mean ‘get it over with quickly’?!”

As soon as she said that, Nora, who was in front of her, suddenly hooked her toes around the chair next to her. Then, she applied some force and the chair flew straight towards Ruth!

Ruth screamed and tried to duck. But would the target of Nora’s attack be able to avoid her?!

Bang!

The chair crashed into Ruth, grazing her forehead and making her head buzz from the impact. She demanded furiously, “Nora, what are you doing?! Are you trying to break out of jail?!”

After shouting at her, she looked behind her at the SWAT officers and shouted, “What are you people still in a daze for? She is attacking us! Hurry up and arrest her!”

The SWAT officers took a step forward. Just as they were about to attack, Nora suddenly whipped out her cell phone-Morris’ face was displayed on the screen.

Nora hadn’t had enough sleep, so she was very grumpy at the moment.

She felt a lot better after she hit Ruth. Only then did she say, “Captain Ford, go ahead and tell them what you have to say!”

At the sight of Morris, Ruth’s pupils shrank.

... Impossible!

There was no signal at the area where Morris was. She had only started to target Nora after she confirmed that Morris was unreachable by phone, so how did she manage to give him a video call?!

On the screen, Morris’ lip corners were also twitching The woman obviously could have taken out her cell phone right away, yet she had to get violent instead...

Never mind.

Morris coughed and said, “Nora is someone that I specially recruited. Before recruiting her into the special department, I have already thoroughly investigated everything about her! She has nothing to do with the mysterious organization! In addition, I have been constantly kept in the loop about her communication with Trueman Yale. It was also because of her contact with Yale that we were able to pinpoint his place of residence and arrest those suspects.”

His words clearly explained what had happened to everyone.

The members of the special department’s interrogation unit understood at once that they didn’t need to interrogate Nora at all. The members of the special department didn’t have any feelings for Nora. After all, she was cold and distant in nature. Although she held a position in the special department, she hardly came to work.

However, the members of the special department trusted Morris a lot, especially after the Johnson incident.

Therefore, what Morris said must be true.

Moreover, given Morris’ high position in the department, if he was willing to be Nora’s guarantor, then they should not be interrogating Nora anymore.

Ruth also understood this. Even though she was filled with hatred, she knew that she had already missed the opportunity to do anything, so she did not dare to say any more.

Without Johnson providing her cover, everything she did now must be logical and reasonable in order for her to be able to stand her ground.

Thus, she said, “Since Captain Ford has put it that way, then Ms. Smith can go. However, since her mother is related to the case, then it stands to reason that Ms. Smith should stay away from the investigation to avoid suspicion! Therefore, shouldn’t Ms. Smith stop participating in further interrogations related to the case, Captain Ford?” Even if she couldn’t bring her down, she would drive her away!

Morris hadn’t even spoken yet when Nora herself said, “Sure.”

Nora looked at the people in front of her lazily.

To be honest, there were indeed people who really couldn't fit into the team atmosphere after joining the group halfway.

Moreover, she had always come and gone alone. During this period of time in the special department, she hadn't felt any concern from them at all, either. All she had experienced was just pressure and restrictions.

She had already wanted to leave the special department a long time ago.

However!

Nora went on. "Let me interrogate those people before I go. After I am sure that they are telling the truth, I will leave." Her mother was indeed involved with the mysterious organization.

Otherwise, she wouldn't have told her to keep a low profile, bide her time, and avoid standing out, lest she attracted the mysterious organization's attention and put herself in danger.

But if her mother really was the leader of the mysterious organization, then why hadn't she gone abroad and met up with the mysterious organization after she fled from New York back then?

Given how the mysterious organization could move Trueman to places without anyone realizing it, wouldn't it also be a piece of cake for them to move her mother somewhere else back then?

Yet they hadn't!

Not only had they not done that, but Yvette had even gone to California, where she spent the rest of her life. On top of that, she even married a little ruffian like Henry Smith and entrusted herself to him.

Something was definitely wrong!

While she was contemplating, Ruth said sarcastically, "Ms. Smith, I have already talked about this just now. Even if you don't trust me, don't you trust Black Cat? It's impossible for the interrogation proposal that I designed with Black Cat to have flaws."

Black Cat...

Tsk.

After the spotlight incident, she felt extremely disgusted that how the woman was using her to brag.

Nora's lip corners suddenly curled into a smile and she sneered, "Do you really know Black

Cat?"

Ruth raised her chin at once. "Of course. Black Cat and I are very good friends. Our colleagues have already seen us when we were discussing the proposal together the other time..." But as soon as she said that, Nora retorted dispassionately, "But Black Cat doesn't know

you!"

Black Cat didn't know her?

Ruth's pupils shrank and her head whipped towards Nora. She clenched her fists nervously and retorted, "What? I don't understand what you're saying!"

"Oh, you don't? Then I'll explain it to you carefully."

Nora hadn't slept well, and on top of that, she had only eaten a bowl of oatmeal after she woke up, so she was a little tired. She suddenly pulled a chair next to her over and sat with the back of the chair facing her. She propped her arms on the back of the chair and slowly said, "You're aware that Karl has been acquitted,

right?"

Black Cat was the number one assassin in Karl's Assassin Alliance. However, outsiders were completely unaware that Karl had never actually met Black Cat before.

Following what Nora was saying, everyone immediately understood that she had met the real Black Cat before.

Everyone in the special department gasped.

Nora stared at Ruth. The wound on her forehead was still bleeding. She was holding a tissue against the wound, but her eyes were already starting to become evasive. Nevertheless, she said insistently, "Yeah, I know that, but I have no idea what you are trying to say."

Nora sighed. She said solemnly, "Aren't you very smart? Yet you don't even understand something as simple as this? Then let me put it more bluntly for you!"

She slowly said, "Black Cat said that they don't know you at all. So, which Black Cat did you design the so-called interrogation plan with?"

Ruth choked on her breath.

Of course, she knew that the Black Cat she had spoken with was a fake.

She was about to use the same trick again when Nora said lightly, "Surely that Black Cat of yours didn't also deceive you, right?"

Ruth: "!!"

During all her previous interactions with Nora, she had always found the woman very stupid, and thought that she didn't really know how to speak properly. She didn't expect that she would also know how to diss someone!

Her rhetorical question had rendered Ruth speechless. Her throat moved a little, but even after a long while, she still couldn't squeeze even a word out of her mouth.

It was surprisingly Nora who couldn't be bothered with her anymore. She looked straight at her cell phone and said to Morris, "I'm going to interrogate those few suspects."

"Okay."

Morris agreed without any hesitation.

Ever since the Johnson incident, because of Morris' meritorious contributions, the word "acting" had been removed from the front of his job title. He could now make the decisions for everything pertaining to the special department.

Now that he had spoken, those who had obeyed Ruth's instructions were no longer under her control.

Nora walked straight to the interrogation room.

Morris picked a few people to work with her.

As for Ruth, she remained where she was.

Mark and a few others who had cooperated with Ruth also awkwardly stood where they were. In particular, the staff member who had installed the spotlight in Nora's room for Ruth just now felt even more embarrassed. He couldn't help but stare at Ruth and say, "As it turns out, you don't know Black Cat at all? You are so full of lies. Which sentence of yours is actually true?!"

Ruth bit her lip.

She clenched her fists tightly. A short while later, she suddenly looked at the man and retorted, "Regardless of whether I know Black Cat or not, the interrogation proposal I produced has indeed yielded useful information, and that is what I am capable of!"

The way people all around looked at her suddenly changed.

In particular, Damon immediately said, "Previously, I thought you were just deceived by a fake Q, but you actually used the same trick time and again. I have finally seen your true colors!"

Ruth knew that she couldn't carry on the act anymore. With nothing else to lose, she threw the handle after the blade.

She took a deep breath and said, "Yes, I don't know Q or Black Cat, I made up all of it! But my ability is real! There is absolutely no problem with that interrogation proposal!"

Then, she looked at Nora's back and followed after her.

The others also followed after her.

Ruth stared at Nora and sneered, "You just don't give up, do you? So, you don't believe that all of this has something to do with your mother and that your mother is the mysterious organization's second-in-command? Okay then, go ahead and interrogate them yourself! Let's see what you can get out of them!"

There was anger in her words.

But at the same time, there was confidence!

Her interrogation methods were viable and were the real deal! Besides, the bodyguards had all been trained by the mysterious organization, and would never easily reveal the mysterious organization's location. How would they possibly tell the truth?

By stupidly going over to interrogate them, Nora was doing nothing more than a final struggle.

She knew that whatever Nora was about to do was nothing more than a few tips the real Black Cat had given her. However! When it came to interrogation, the actual person had to be present in order for it to work.

Black Cat's capabilities weren't something that one could learn with just a few words. If that was possible, Black Cat could just publish a book. Why would everyone have to admire Black Cat so much?

Black Cat had their own style and momentum!

Therefore, Ruth was confident that nothing would come out of Nora's interrogation!

Nora ignored her. Before she entered the interrogation room, her cell phone vibrated. She looked down to see that it was actually a reply from Trueman.

This time, Trueman did not dodge her questions. Instead, he answered her questions directly. Her question was: 'Who plotted my pregnancy?'

Trueman's answer, however, made her pupils shrink.

Nora cast her eyes down. A moment later, she put down her cell phone and instructed the people accompanying her, "You guys wait outside. I will go in alone."

The special department staff members wanted to say something, but the video call with Morris was still connected, so he said, "Do as she says." With that, all of them stood outside the door.

Nora entered the interrogation room and closed the door.

The moment the door closed, all the sounds outside were cut off. All the sounds inside the interrogation room were also isolated.

Ruth stared nervously at the door to the interrogation room.

She knew that if Nora got a different answer from hers in her interrogation, then she would most likely be fired from the special department.

But... there was no way Nora would be able to get anything out of them.

She comforted herself.

In the interrogation room.

Nora sat opposite one of the bodyguards. The bodyguard, who was shackled down with iron chains, was seated opposite her. The two looked at each other. Suddenly, Nora asked, "You said that my mother was involved with the mysterious organization, right?"

The bodyguard nodded. "Yes."

Nora cast her eyes down. "Is that really true?"

The bodyguard nodded again. "Yes, it is. Our purpose in coming to the United States this time is precisely to take over what she has left behind. You are her descendant! So that makes you a member of the mysterious organization too!"

Nora stared at him. "I will ask you once more -is what you just said true?"

"Yes, it's true."

The bodyguard answered firmly.

"Oh, okay." Nora got onto her feet and disconnected the video call with Morris. Then, she flexed her wrists and said, "In that case, the interrogation officially begins now."

"The interrogation officially begins"?

The bodyguard was dumbfounded. Before he could understand what was going on, Nora suddenly came up to him. With a lazy demeanor and a bit of impatience in her facial expression, she stretched out her hand...

"Ahhhh!!"

A sharp cry of pain came from the interrogation room.

Even the interrogation room's great soundproofing couldn't completely drown out the cry, which went to show just how loud the man in the interrogation room had been.

The people outside became nervous at once.

Damon and Mark went up to the door to the interrogation room and looked inside worriedly. They called out, "Ms. Smith? Ms. Nora Smith? Are you okay?"

But apart from cries of pain, no other sound came out of the room.

Damon couldn't help but ask, "That guy couldn't have broken free and assaulted Ms. Smith, right?"

A look of worry also came over Mark's countenance.

Ruth stood at the side and scoffed inwardly. Here she was, thinking that Black Cat had really imparted a skill or two to Nora. As it turned out, they had just told her to torture them, that was all.

This was against the law!

Nora must have given up on herself after making up her mind to leave the special department, right?

When it came to things like torture, every report made was taken seriously.

Besides, with the way how those bodyguards from the mysterious organization were, it was impossible that one could make them talk just by torturing them. If it was possible, the special department personnel would have done it a long time ago.

She had a lot of faith in the well-trained members of the mysterious organization.

While she was thinking about it, cries of pain traveled over from the room one after another. She leaned against the wall outside leisurely.

After waiting for a full ten minutes, the door to the interrogation room suddenly opened.

Nora walked out of it calmly.

There seemed to be a little displeasure on her countenance, making the hearts of the people outside sink.

Ruth, however, became excited. She immediately said, “Nora, did you get anything out of them? Or did you not manage to get them to say anything at all? Or did you get the same answer as I did just now? Also, you tortured him just now, right? Is the information received through such methods reliable? Will he give you false evidence?”

Nora stared at her. “I didn’t torture him.”

“You didn’t?” Ruth sneered, “How can that be? The man’s voice was close to shooting up to the high heavens just now, we all heard it. Are you still trying to deny it?! Heh, I’m going in to have a look!”

She went straight into the interrogation room.

Damon and Mark also followed behind her closely. What the two of them were thinking, though, was that if Nora had really tortured the suspect, then they must find a way to cover it up for her.

Unexpectedly, when the three of them entered the interrogation room, they instead found the bodyguard drenched in sweat. Cold sweat was dripping from his forehead, but he actually didn’t look like he had suffered any injuries!

Ruth refused to give up. She took a step forward and checked the person’s vitals, but she couldn’t find anything wrong with him.

Ruth hesitated.

Did she really not torture him?

Why was Nora so mysterious in everything she did, though? She really didn’t know what she had done just now. However, Ruth suddenly didn’t dare to let her make contact with the other suspects anymore. She frowned and looked straight at Damon. She said, “Nora must not have gotten anything out of them, but we clearly heard something just now. Therefore, we mustn’t let her interrogate the rest of the suspects!”

Damon lowered his head. He, who had no affection for Ruth whatsoever, didn’t feel like listening to Ruth talk at all at the moment.

Ruth wanted to say more, but Nora's low voice had already traveled over. "He has confessed everything. Re-interrogate him and get a statement from him." Everyone: "???" Ruth: "??!"

After Nora said that, she glanced at the bodyguard in the interrogation room.

The simple glance from her actually made the bodyguard shudder all over. The big burly man had always been rational and aggressive before this, but it was as if he had become a completely different person.

Stunned, Ruth asked, "What did she do to you?"

What did she do to him?

The thought of what had taken place just now terrified the bodyguard.

He swallowed and suddenly said, "I'll confess! I'll confess everything! Don't let her interrogate me anymore! She's the devil himself! The devil!!!"

Half an hour later, a dispirited Ruth walked out of the interrogation room with the others.

All of them had rather awful looks on their faces as they looked at Ruth. Mark said, "I will send the new information from the interrogation to Captain Ford right away. As for how you will be dealt with, it's up to Captain Ford."

After speaking, he hurriedly walked to the side and called Morris to give him a report.

The others stared at Ruth.

Five minutes later, Mark returned.

He stared at Ruth and said, "Captain Ford says that the special department does not need a hypocrite like you. Please leave!!"

Ruth might have deceived them, but her academic qualifications were real. Her claims of knowing Q and Black Cat were all made verbally, so there was no actual accountability to be held.

It was just like how a lot of ordinary people would brag and claim that they knew certain high-ranking officials. Even if one saw through their lies, could they arrest him?

As long as they didn't make use of that to break the law, no one could arrest them.

Ruth hadn't broken the law either. If one must say that she had made a mistake, then it would just be negligence at work at most. Her academic qualifications and so on were all real. The interrogation plans she had produced were also all rigorous and backed up by science. It was just that the information she received from the interrogation was different from the final answer.

Ruth bit her lip. Even without her looking up, she could still feel the gazes from the people around her. She balled up her hands and suddenly shouted, "You can't do this to me! Captain Ford can't do this to me! Be it my interrogation methods or the statements, none of it is wrong! Nora's mother really is the mysterious organization's second-in-command! There is no doubt about that!"

Seeing that she was still unrepentant, Mark sighed and said, "But she has already betrayed the mysterious organization! You didn't manage to get them to tell you this critical fact! That makes the statement you got the complete opposite!"

Yes, that's right...

Yvette had indeed been the second-in-command in the mysterious organization. In fact, she had even been a key figure in the gene serum's research and development. However, she had later betrayed the mysterious organization and fled back to the United States. After being arrested in the country, the reason why she had fled from prison was also to escape the mysterious organization's pursuit! That was why she had escaped to California!

Also!

When Yvette escaped, she had taken away a key part of the mysterious organization's research and development of the gene serum. As a result, their gene serum research and development had been missing something all these years. All the gene serums they had developed were also incomplete.

This was why the people who consumed the gene serum either went crazy or died. Why had Yvette betrayed the mysterious organization? The bodyguards did not know the reason. All they knew was that the purpose of them coming

to the United States was to take back from Yvette's successor everything that had belonged to the mysterious organization.

It could be said that based on Ruth's interrogation results, Nora had become the enemy of the special department.

But when one looked at the final interrogation results instead, not only was Nora not their enemy, but she was even in the same camp as the special department.

These were two completely different conclusions.

As for whether it was Ruth's lack of ability that led to her failure to uncover the final conclusion or a deliberate act on her part, Morris couldn't be bothered to pursue this.

At least, on the surface, she was no longer suitable to stay in the special department.

Meanwhile.

Nora was outside the interrogation room. She had also interrogated the other bodyguards. The answers she got from them were the same.

She clenched her jaw.

She picked up her cell phone and looked at Trueman's reply to her text message:

"Your pregnancy was out of everyone's expectations. After an investigation into it, we were able to confirm that your mother was the one who had set up the whole thing. You should be aware that she made a deal with Caleb, but she deceived him, as well as the rest of us all. The original agreement between Caleb and her was that once you came of age, she would return to the organization what she had stolen while you married into the Grays. But for some reason, she broke the agreement. Your mother has never been someone trustworthy!"

Nora stared at the text message.

What she remembered of her mother was that she had fled to California behind Ian's back. She was the one who had left her the audio recording in

California, as well as the one who had made various arrangements for her future.

After she came to New York, she had also learned from other people what her mother had been like. Therefore, the image she had of her mother had gradually started to take a clear shape in her mind.

Even if she had never felt her mother's embrace before, the impression she had of her mother was now that of a strong, independent, powerful, and unrestrained woman.

She was the center of attention that even young and talented men like Ian had pursued. It could be said that she was someone whom almost everyone looked up to.

The Carefree Pill she had developed on a whim had become sought after by all after she improved its formula.

Her prowess in alternative medicine was recognized by everyone in the field. Even Jon, no matter how much he disliked her, always looked like he thought of her as a talented person whenever he mentioned her.

Everyone who had lived in the same era as her mother called her a legend whenever they mentioned her.

She was just like the sun-alive and vibrant, yet also enviable.

People only had praise for her whenever they mentioned her name!

Yet, she had really once been a member of the mysterious organization... On top of that, she had even made use of a method like artificial insemination to make her daughter pregnant!

She took a deep breath, Caleb's words suddenly flashing across her mind: "... the final truth will definitely be cruel."

Nora clenched her hands into fists.

No matter the reason for her betrayal to the mysterious organization, her decision was right. For the special department, the fact that she was not an enemy was cause for celebration.

But for her...

Why on earth would she want to plot against her own daughter like that?!

She had always hated how her life was out of her own control. Becoming pregnant was the only thing in her life that had deviated from her expectations.

She could only say that she was fortunate that Justin was the children's father. But... what if she hadn't fallen in love with Justin her whole life? Would those two children have been destined to grow up without a mother or a father?!

For a moment there, her feelings towards Yvette became rather complicated.

At this time, Morris finally came back.

He looked like he was in a hurry. From the looks of it, he had just gotten off the helicopter. After entering the special department, he immediately made eye contact with Nora.

Then, he took a deep breath and said, "You can't leave."

Nora didn't respond. She was uninhibited by nature, and such a lifestyle of having to adhere to rules and regulations in everything she did actually didn't suit her.

Compared to working in the special department, she would prefer to sleep instead.

Besides, now that they had figured out the truth, she didn't feel that there was a need for her to stay anymore.

She didn't speak, her stance clear.

Morris gazed at her. A while later, he finally heaved a sigh. "Never mind. It's only because certain people in the department disappointed

you."

His gaze swept towards Mark and the others nearby

Mark and the others hung their heads at once.

Cooperating with Ruth to interrogate Nora was indeed something that filled them with guilt.

Nora said, "It's nothing." She wasn't planning on holding those things against them because she had never once regarded Mark and the others as friends.

Seeing how indifferent she was, Morris kept quiet for a moment before he finally said, "If you want to leave, then why don't you pay Caleb Gray one last visit? He probably has something to tell you." Caleb?

Nora was a little surprised. She then turned and walked towards Caleb's interrogation room.

In the hall.

With a sharp look in his eyes, Morris stared at the people who had cooperated with Ruth. He pointed at them and said, "Do you guys know what you have done wrong?!"

However, they didn't know what Morris was upset about. Someone among them even said with dissatisfaction, "Captain Ford, we were just following procedure. We can apologize to Ms. Smith."

"It's too late."

Morris knew that Nora would never turn back once she made up her mind.

He also knew that everything that took place in the special department during this period of time had immensely disappointed her.

Those people curled their lips disdainfully. "That's Ms. Smith being petty, then. Is there anyone here who wouldn't have the occasional disagreement with one another? How is it that she's the only..."

But before he could finish his sentence, Morris' gaze had already swept towards him, causing him to shut up.

"Isn't she just a forensic doctor? What's she being so arrogant for?!"

Someone muttered under their breath.

When Morris heard this, he sneered, “A forensic doctor? Do you think she is just a forensic doctor?! The way I see it, you still don’t understand what you have missed out

on!”

“What else could it be...”

The man replied with dissatisfaction.

At the side, as Damon stared after Nora, for some reason, he couldn’t help but feel like there was some sort of mysterious and unfathomable aura around her. He suddenly asked, “She’s... not Q, is she?”

Morris didn’t say anything.

He did not deny it, but he did not refute him either.

Damon’s eyes gradually widened. He thought of some of the things they had done to Nora after she joined the special department and he held his head in regret. “If... if she really is Q, then... my god, what have I done to her?!” The person next to him was taken aback when he heard him. However, even though Q was a god to the people in the IT department, they were nothing to them. Thus, he said, “What’s the big deal about people like Q and Y? At the bottom of it all, they are just hackers. For the special department, it’s Black Cat who is the most impressive! As long as she isn’t Black Cat, our loss is negligible!”

But as soon as he said that, someone nearby poked him.

In a low voice, he said, “After she interrogated the bodyguards just now, the bodyguards called her the devil and revealed everything...”

As soon as he said that, the whole place suddenly fell silent.

A short while later, someone murmured, “S-surely not...? Could it be that...”

“Impossible! If she’s Q, how can she be Black Cat?”

Someone could not believe it. “Besides, Miss Smith doesn’t look like one to dirty her hands. A delicate young mistress can’t be the number one killer.”

The number one killer was a top-secret agent!

Such a person must have trained every muscle in their body. Furthermore, they probably had to train every day. Miss Smith was so free. She was either sleeping or preparing to sleep at all times. How could it be her?

When this was said, everyone believed it.

After all, in the special department, those who maintained their muscles really needed to train every day. However, Nora looked thin and weak. She could not be that strong.

Someone else said, “She was interrogating those people earlier. Black Cat must have given her some tips!”

This thought seemed to make everyone feel more comfortable and accept it. After all, if Nora was Black Cat, that would be too inconceivable. Therefore, everyone nodded and echoed this thought.

Morris was not sure if Nora was Black Cat, either.

However, in terms of martial arts, Nora was Quinn School of Martial Arts’ Big Sister. He felt that since she was Q and Big Sister, there was a high chance that she was Black Cat. After all, Black Cat was a top-secret agent and a special-class killer. No matter what they did, other than strong martial arts and intelligence, they also needed a good grasp of technology.

Forget about the uncertainty.

However...

Morris slowly said, “Black Cat’s identity is mysterious. It’s not something that can be seen through by any ordinary person. Black Cat isn’t someone that just anyone can hire. However, Nora knows Karl. He might be the person who understands Black Cat the most.”

When the people heard this, they were a little indignant. “Karl is also one of us now. Can’t we just get Karl to invite Black Cat? She knows Black Cat probably through Karl, right?”

As soon as someone said this, Morris’s voice turned cold. He smiled sarcastically and said, “You have the cheek to mention Karl?”

Everyone shut their mouths at once.

Morris's gaze swept across everyone's faces coldly and he said word by word, "You guys always say that Nora is useless. Then I'll help you guys count how many things she has done for us since she joined the special department!"

"She was the one who lured Trueman out and gave us a chance to capture him. Regardless of whether she's Q or not, she was the one who gave us Trueman's location. Otherwise, our Internet department wouldn't even be able to compare to the experts on Trueman's side. We couldn't locate him at all! Furthermore, it was her who fixed the network department's bugs!"

Damon's face turned red.

Morris looked at Mark again. "It was also her who set up a trap at the last minute and exposed Captain Johnson's true face. She also proved our hero Karl's innocence. Otherwise, Karl would have been killed by you already, right?! You still want to find Black Cat through Karl? Heh..."

Mark was embarrassed and lowered his head.

"So, what right do you have to judge Nora here? Not to mention her identity, just going by her contribution to the special department, who can compare to her?"

Morris's every word pierced into the hearts of these people. The entire place fell silent. No one raised any objections.

Morris saw that the people had finally shut their mouths and looked at Mark. "Come here."

Mark followed behind Morris, and the two of them walked to the side.

Morris suddenly said, "Take a few people and monitor Ruth 24/7! You must catch her!"

Mark looked at him in a daze. "Captain Ford, you're..."

His eyes lit up. "You're suspecting Ruth?"

Morris lowered his eyes. Of course, Ruth was suspicious! She first interrogated the four bodyguards, and the answers she got were all aimed at Nora. If Nora had not interrogated the bodyguards again, she might have

been implicated by Ruth. She might even have had to leave the country, right?

Moreover, after detaining Nora, she took advantage of the time when his phone had no signal to interrogate Nora. It was as if she was afraid that he would not give her this chance.

Furthermore... he had received news of the mysterious organization and the other party had deliberately set up a signal jammer nearby. Wasn't this too much of a coincidence?

If Nora had not hacked the jamming device and forcefully contacted him, he might still have been outside!

There were too many coincidences, so many that he could not help but suspect Ruth.

Before Morris could answer, Mark instantly stood up. "Captain Ford, don't worry. I promise to complete the mission this time!" Morris nodded. On the other hand, Nora entered Caleb's interrogation room and saw Caleb was reading something. His cough seemed to have improved a lot and was not as frequent as before.

Hearing this, Caleb turned to look at her and said, "Your medicine is not bad."

Before this, Nora had given Sheril a formula and asked her to help concoct a bottle of medicine. Although it could not treat lung cancer, it could slow down his cough.

Nora nodded. "I'll further refine it for you later."

Caleb was silent for a moment before suddenly saying, "Then you have to speed up."⁷

Nora: "?"

She was stunned for a moment and looked at Caleb in confusion.

Caleb put down the book and poured a cup of tea for Nora. His treatment here had clearly improved. "I'm afraid I'll leave soon."

Nora paused. "Where are you going?"

“Back to the mysterious organization.”

Caleb said slowly.

His words stunned Nora.

If he was imprisoned here, how could he return to the mysterious organization?

Nora had just thought of this when Caleb answered her doubts. “I chatted with Captain Ford.”

Nora instantly understood.

Karl’s identity had already been revealed, and he was no longer suitable to be a spy overseas. So Morris had instigated Caleb?

Nora was stunned.

Caleb’s status in the mysterious organization should be quite high. How could he be persuaded to defect so easily?

As she was thinking, she heard Caleb suddenly say, “Actually, I’m the same as your mother.”

The same...

Nora looked at him directly. “What do you mean? Do you know why she betrayed the mysterious organization back then?”

“Yes.”

Caleb replied calmly and pointed to the chair opposite him. “Sit. There are some things I want to tell you.”

Nora was really only here to say goodbye. After all, she had left the special department. It was indeed inconvenient to see him again in the future.

But she did not expect Caleb to suddenly reveal the truth from back then?!

What had Yvette done back then?v

Nora sat opposite Caleb and looked at this man who was getting thinner and thinner because of lung cancer. His deep eyes were filled with helplessness as if he had seen through the world.

Those eyes made him look more refined.

He slowly said, "Do you know how your mother joined the mysterious organization?"

Nora shook her head. "No."

Caleb slowly said, "Actually, she was tricked into it."

Nora was surprised. Caleb continued, "The mysterious organization was a small society. Your mother was deliberately set up with difficult questions and baited by them to join, but she had no idea what the organization was really doing... Your mother was only interested in genetic modification. Human genes always have defects. Think about it, who wouldn't want their genes to be perfect? Your mother was virtuous and her research in medicine had already reached the peak back then.

Everyone in the country said that Dr. Zabe's alternative medicine was the best, but that was not the case. Back then, the best in alternative medicine was actually your mother. It was just that she was still young and could not compare to Dr. Zabe in terms of seniority.

That's why she was targeted by the mysterious organization.

The leader of the mysterious organization was famous for his academic research. He often discussed medicine with your mother and threw out all kinds of difficult questions about the production of gene serums.

Your mother used up all her wits and answered whatever questions she could every time. Over time, your mother started sensing that something was wrong, so she asked the leader.

The leader invited your mother to visit their dream factory overseas. Only then did your mother discover the true identity of the mysterious organization!"

Caleb lowered his eyes. "Do you know what the mysterious organization has done?"

Nora shook her head. "I don't really know."

Caleb took a deep breath and said slowly, "The mysterious organization studied the gene serum. In the beginning, they tested it on adults and realized that their genes had already been rigidly fixed. It was not viable to change them again. Most of the people who had been injected with the gene serum either turned crazy or exploded. Therefore, they changed their strategy. Only experiments on some children could succeed. Therefore, in that year, they bought a thousand children who had been abducted or abandoned all over the world. Most of those children were just born and were not even three years old.

Those children all became the subjects of their experiments. They often injected drugs and extracted blood from them. Some even treated them as Petri dishes to see the effects. They sized up the viruses and bacterias. Some even deliberately injected the ratio virus into them to see if the gene serum can defeat the virus. Some even had their hands and feet chopped off and their organs plucked because the researchers wanted to know if the gene serum had the ability to regenerate their organs... And while doing those experiments, they wouldn't inject the children with anesthetic because the anesthetic would change the effect of the gene serum... Among a thousand children, only a few survived, and most of them died."

Nora's heart clenched tightly when she heard these words.

She had always known that the mysterious organization was filled with evil and was trying to change the human genetic sequence. Furthermore, she had seen with her own eyes that Hillary, Yvonne, and the others had all been harmed by that drug. After entering the special department, she had also checked the information and knew that the mysterious organization was experimenting with children. There were also data about there being about a thousand children.

However, she had never known that the details were so infuriating!

Caleb had said it in too much detail, so much so that an image appeared in her mind.

If it was six years ago when she didn't have children, she might have only called them animals. However, now, whenever she thought of Cherry or Pete lying on the operating table and being tortured by them, she felt like destroying the mysterious organization!

They were so cruel and inhumane!

Nora's expression turned cold. "And?"

Caleb took a deep breath. "When your mother saw this, she also felt strange anger. Only then did she realize that she had unintentionally helped a tyrant for so long. However, she also understood that a head-on clash could not resolve the problem. She pretended to cooperate and accepted the leader's invitation to become the boss of the research and development department and the second-in-command of the entire organization. Then, she found an opportunity to steal the data at the research and development department and fled back to the country with the information."

Nora clenched her fists. "Then?"

"At that time, the mysterious organization was only thought of as an organization engaged in child trafficking. Your mother was caught by mistake. After she found an excuse to escape, she realized that the people in the mysterious organization were very resourceful. She could not resist at all and thus she fled. Do you know why she went to California?"

Nora shook her head.

Caleb sighed. "Because she had saved a three-year-old boy from the 1,000 children captured by the mysterious organization. That boy told her to look for his parents in California."

Nora was stunned and looked at Caleb in shock.

Caleb smiled. "That's right. That boy is me."

Nora: "!!"

She stood up in shock and looked at Caleb in disbelief.

Caleb lowered his eyes and slowly said, "When I was three, they injected me with a gene serum and improved my genetic code. They deliberately did not inject the serum all at once. At that time, my parents being quite capable reached the mysterious organization to find me. Unfortunately, by that time, I could no longer leave. My body had been conditioned such that I would die if I stopped taking the serum at regular intervals. I had to be injected with the serum every month to maintain my life."

Perhaps he had said too much at once, and he coughed again.

Nora handed the tea to him.

He took a sip and suppressed the itch in his throat. "And thus, I was tied to the mysterious organization. When my parents found out, they felt helpless. At that time, your mother decided to make a deal with the Grays. The Grays helped her hide her identity and guaranteed to raise you until you were 18 years old. She also left the formula for the last dose of the serum. I was to be injected with the last dose once I turned 25."

When she heard this, Nora suddenly understood everything.

No wonder she had an engagement with Anthony! No wonder the Grays did not break off the engagement even when she got pregnant. What they wanted was the formula for the last dose of the serum!

And the reason why the mysterious organization came to New York and kept looking for her mother was because of that formula!

At this moment, she came to a sudden realization!

But what about her pregnancy? Why did her mother betray the Grays and arrange for her to have a child with Justin? Was there a secret behind this?!

She stared at Caleb.

Caleb waved his hand. "Don't look at me like that. I don't need that drug anymore."

Nora was surprised.

Caleb laughed softly. "I'm one of the few remaining children out of the 1,000. Logically speaking, my transformation was very successful. Unfortunately, I was diagnosed with lung cancer when I was 26. That's why I no longer need that drug."

Nora fell silent.

Suddenly, she felt that the deal between the Grays and her mother was not worth it. They had helped hide their identities for so long, but in the end, fate had played a joke on Caleb.

She lowered her eyes. "If I can find the formula for the last drug, I'll give it to you."

Caleb laughed softly. "Aren't you afraid that I'm still loyal to the mysterious organization and am lying to you about the formula?" Nora stared at him and did not speak for a moment.

Caleb sighed silently. "I won't tease you anymore. I've already hated the mysterious organization deeply. This illness has instead helped me. I can finally get rid of them. However, I've always been living on the edge. I only have two months left to live. I want to use my limited life to help the special department. It could be my help to humanity. Let's make them pay for the thousand children who died in front of me!"

Nora understood. "So Morris will let you go and you'll go undercover?"

"Yes." Caleb looked at the ground. "Trueman is one of the children of the leader. Back then, the leader threw his children in and injected them with serums. Only Trueman survived, so he's the second-in-charge of the mysterious organization. This is also the main reason why the mysterious organization has been looking for the last formula your mother left behind! If he doesn't inject the last dose within half a year, Trueman will die."

Nora was stunned. "Then you and Trueman..."

Caleb chuckled. "That's right. I grew up with him. Many of us kept dying every month. In the end, only four have survived till now. Perhaps because of our experiences together, Trueman is still polite to me. Furthermore, because of the serum, I'm smarter than ordinary people. My status in the mysterious organization is higher. But even so, I don't know where the leader and Trueman's nest is... My goal for returning this time is to find their foundation so that the special department can cooperate with Interpol and eliminate them all!"

Nora was silent for a long time. The truth she had been searching for was exposed in front of her just like that, but this truth was incomparably cruel.

After a long time, she asked, "How did my mother die back then?"

Caleb was silent for a moment.

Nora stared at him with a determined look. "I want to hear the truth."

Caleb sighed. "The mysterious organization is very powerful. Back then, your mother leaked some information under the cover of my parents. Seeing that they were about to come looking for you, your mother chose to die to protect you."

Back then, Yvette had left Ian because she didn't want to drag him into all of her mess.

Later on, when she was discovered, she knew that she could no longer escape.

She had used her death to stop that pursuit.

Caleb continued, "After your mother died, my parents helped cover all the evidence, and you were safe. But no one expected for the Andersons to recognize you. You even appeared in New York in such a high-profile manner. Yvette had a daughter who was still alive. This attracted the attention of the mysterious organization, and it finally made them discover what had happened back then."

Caleb lowered his eyes. "When he found out that my parents and I had hidden your whereabouts to protect you, the leader wanted to kill me. It was Trueman who begged for mercy and saved my life."

Nora also said, "After you were caught, Trueman sent me a message. He said that he would answer one of my questions in exchange for me to give you medicine. He treats you pretty well."

Caleb sighed. "Yes, this is also why I didn't betray all these years the mysterious organization despite knowing that they were in the wrong."

Nora nodded and asked again, "About my pregnancy..."

"I don't know anything about that," Caleb replied. "I don't understand why you got pregnant. I don't understand why my family has protected you for so many years."

Caleb smiled bitterly. "Back then, Anthony despised you and refused to fulfill the marriage agreement. After this matter blew up too many times, my family even suggested that I take his place and fulfill the marriage agreement."

He looked at Nora, his eyes were suddenly deep. "In the end, we're not fated to be together."

Faced with his words, Nora did not know how to answer.

Caleb muttered to himself, "Fortunately, you didn't marry me."

He coughed.

Nora looked at him and sighed. She did not say anything and patted his shoulder. "When are you leaving? I'll see you off."

"No, it's fine."

Caleb replied slowly, "I'll pretend to escape. Otherwise, Trueman would find out."

Nora nodded.

The two of them were speechless for a moment. Nora simply said, "I'll get going then."

"Okay, goodbye."

When Nora walked to the door, she realized that Caleb had already picked up the book and was back to reading it leisurely.

He looked warm and mellow, and he indeed looked suitable for such a scene.

Nora then went out and did not see Caleb suddenly put down his book after she left. He looked at the door and let out a long sigh.

Then, he covered his chest and coughed violently.

He quickly took out the medicine Nora had prepared for him. He opened it and wanted to take a pill, but he suddenly realized that there was only one pill left in the bottle. He stared at the pill for a while and suddenly laughed at himself. He placed the pill back into the bottle and could not bear to take it. Nora, who was outside the door, did not know this.

She only looked at Morris and asked, "When did Caleb start talking?"

Morris stared at Nora for a while and replied, "The day after you sent him the medicine."

Nora: "..."

She did not speak and just waved at Morris before leaving..

From the moment she left the special department to the parking lot, she did not look back.

Life was not worth looking back at.

Nora arrived at the parking lot and saw Justin's car parked not far away. She had just walked over when she saw Ruth standing in front of Justin. She was tightly clutching Justin's sleeve. "Mr. Hunt, I knew it. I knew you would definitely come if I locked up Nora. It's too difficult to see you!"

Justin's expression was cold and even a little impatient.

He was about to speak when Ruth shouted, "You can't treat me like this. Have you forgotten that night five years ago? I was the woman that night!"

Nora, who was about to walk over, was speechless.

She stopped in her tracks. Her first thought was not that Justin was dating this woman, but that Ruth was somehow involved in the matter of extracting Justin's sperm and injecting it into her body to make her pregnant?!

How did she get pregnant? How did Justin lose his memories and got schemed against? She was still wondering when this woman exposed herself.

She had really met her match!!

panda`nove1-coM

Justin did not plan to bother with this woman at all.

However, he did not expect Ruth to suddenly say such a shocking thing, making him frown.

Actually, he had dreamed of that night a few times recently. In his dream, he had not been robbed by some cold instrument. Instead, he had slept with a woman! He had brushed it aside thinking it was just a wet dream.

However, when Ruth shouted this, he frowned tightly.

For some reason, at this moment, he recalled very clearly that he had indeed slept with a woman five years ago!

This realization suddenly made him nervous. His heart clenched slightly as he subconsciously looked at Nora.

His first reaction was-would Nora be angry? The second reaction was-if that person was Ruth, he would definitely feel extremely disgusted. Damn it!

However, in his memories, he did not seem to be rejecting her that night...

This thought made him feel like he had swallowed a fly. He felt like his body had betrayed him...

As his thoughts ran wild, the bodyguards who had rushed forward to chase Ruth away were stunned. From what Ruth said, she seemed to have slept with Mr. Hunt?

Should they chase her away or retreat?

Everyone looked at Justin in confusion. However, their big boss was staring straight at Nora in front of him. He did not give them a single glance, making them unable to do anything!

Should they go forward and pull Ruth away or retreat quickly?

Boss, please give some instructions? They didn't want to watch some melodramatic scene here!!

While everyone had their own thoughts, it gave Ruth a chance to showcase her skills. She tried to grab Justin's hand. The man dodged guiltily. Ruth did not get his hand, but she grabbed his sleeve. Ruth looked straight at him. "We've slept together before. Mr. Hunt, have you really forgotten me? Do you really not remember me?!"

Justin: !!

He saw Nora standing there silently in the distance, her gaze fixed on him. He frowned in panic. "Don't talk nonsense!"

"I'm not talking nonsense. I have evidence!"

Ruth was very anxious. She took out her phone directly. "After we slept together back then, I took a photo to remember it."

With that, she handed the photo to Justin.

Justin stared at the photo.

He narrowed his eyes slightly. In the photo, he was lying on the bed, asleep. Ruth was beside him. Her cheeks were slightly red, revealing her fair shoulders. She looked shy and bashful.

Now, there was even evidence.

Justin felt that he could not explain anymore, especially when he met Nora's cold gaze. It actually made him feel that he was... dirty?! Justin felt like he had swallowed half a fly, and he was so disgusted.

He pushed Ruth away and strode towards Nora. "Nora, let me explain..."

Nora waved her hand. "Stay where you are."

Justin was taken aback.

Ruth bit her lip and looked over.

After seeing Nora, her eyes flickered with a fierce and cold light. But then, she looked at her pitifully. "Miss Smith, don't be angry. It was an accident... but... but after that night, I never forgot Mr. Hunt... Mr. Hunt also liked me. That night, he wanted me three times... He even said he would be responsible for me..."

Her eyes turned red immediately. She stared at Nora and said, "I know I'm being very shameless in saying this, but I really love him... I beg you, please help me and Mr. Hunt! You don't love him at all, anyway. You're only with him because of the child..."

She lowered her head and cried.

Justin's expression changed drastically. He pushed her away with disdain as if he was pushing away a pile of trash; as if being stained by her once was already very disgusting and dirty.

He shouted sternly, "Don't talk nonsense! Nora, I'm not, I didn't... five years ago, you know, I had no memories! I was framed!"

Ruth cried even harder. "Mr. Hunt, how could you be like this... You clearly wanted it that night. You seemed intoxicated when you rushed into my room..."

As she spoke, she looked at Nora.

However, this woman, who was usually very cold, was now covered in a layer of frost. She stared at Justin and suddenly sneered before turning to leave.

Justin strode forward, wanting to chase after her.

However, before he could move, Ruth had already grabbed his arm again. "Mr. Hunt, you can't treat me like this!"

When she blocked him, Nora had already gotten into her big black car and driven away.

Justin's expression was very ugly. He lowered his head to look at her, his long phoenix eyes filled with anger and violence. He shouted softly, "Let go!"

Ruth was frightened by his appearance. The mole at the corner of his eye seemed to be filled with killing intent, making her take a step back.

At this moment, Lawrence suddenly walked over in rapid steps and handed the phone to Justin. He whispered, "Mr. Hunt, bad news!"

Justin's eyes narrowed as he looked down. Lawrence explained, "I don't know who sent this message saying that you're suspected of rape. It even has a photo of you and... Miss Ruth from a few years ago!"

Justin looked down. It was a photo of him breaking into Ruth's room.

Lawrence said, "Everyone is speculating now that you often used your power to force women to do in private and even took pictures of them. They say that there are many others that haven't been photographed. They're requesting a strict investigation!"

Justin suddenly looked at Ruth. "You did this?!"

Ruth bit her lip. “Yes, I did it. Mr. Hunt, I can go out there and say that we’re boyfriend and girlfriend. Then, it won’t be considered rape. Otherwise, you’ll definitely be sued!”

Justin frowned.

Ruth stared at him. “Mr. Hunt, can we talk now?”

Justin thought for a moment before saying, “Get in.”

Ruth got into Justin’s car and they drove all the way to the Hunt manor. When they entered, she turned to look at the scenery outside, a light appearing in her eyes.

She was going to be the mistress here soon!

She did not see that Justin was looking down and sending a message to Nora. “I brought her to the Hunt manor. No matter what we do to her here, no one will know. You can come over. Do you want me to pick you up?”

Nora replied, “No need. I’ll come over later.”

Just now, outside the special department, although Nora and Justin hadn’t said a word, when their eyes met, Justin instantly understood Nora’s meaning.

It was outside the special department. The special department was half a police station. It was a fair and strict place. It would be inconvenient to interrogate Ruth there, so it was best to take her away. Therefore, Nora took the opportunity to act. Normal girlfriends would be jealous at that time, right? Therefore, it was normal for her to be angry and leave.

Subsequently, Ruth directed and acted in a public opinion battle. It seemed like she was forcing Justin to lower his head, but Justin was only beating her at her own game and taking advantage of the situation.

Justin put down his phone and narrowed his eyes again.

Ruth should be thankful because if not for Nora coming to interrogate her about her role in what had happened back then, he really wanted to kill Ruth on the spot!

Unfortunately, Ruth seemed unaware of this fact.

The car arrived at the Hunt manor and drove into Justin's residence.

The car stopped and Justin got Ruth out of the car and into the living room. As soon as they entered the living room, Justin was about to call for someone to take Ruth down when Mrs. Hunt's voice suddenly sounded. "Justin, you're finally back!"

With that, she walked over with her walking stick, trembling. "What's with the report on the Internet? What's going on between you and that girl?"

After saying this, she saw Ruth following behind Justin.

Mrs. Hunt was stunned. She frowned in surprise. "This is?"

Ruth immediately stepped forward and held Mrs. Hunt's hand. "Mrs. Hunt, I'm Ruth, and I'm also the girl from the report. Mr. Hunt and I are..."

At this point, she glanced shyly at Justin and then lowered her head. "It's that kind of relationship."

Mrs. Hunt immediately frowned and looked at Justin in surprise and confusion. "Justin, you're..."

Ruth was about to say something when Justin's face turned cold and he said, "Grandma, I have something to discuss here. Please leave for now."

Mrs. Hunt was actually afraid of Justin.

He used to listen to her when he was young, but when he grew up and had his own views, he would never listen to her again. Mrs. Hunt knew very well that apart from respect, Justin's feelings for her were of familial love.

She would not do anything to hurt their relationship, so she said, "Alright, then you guys talk. You guys talk..."

The old lady leaned on her walking stick and walked out slowly.

After she left, Ruth looked at Justin and directly spoke her mind, "Mr. Hunt, I want to be Mrs. Hunt!"

Elsewhere.

Nora returned to the Smiths and saw Tanya standing outside the door. She asked anxiously, "How is it?" Tanya: "They're still arguing." The reason she rushed back was that Tanya had sent her a message saying that the two children had gotten into a fight!

They had a fight!

This was the first time she had heard of it. After all, Cherry was a little cutie who spoke her mind and made people love her.

And Pete was a sensible and obedient little gentleman.

How could the two of them get into a fight?

Hearing the two words "still arguing," Nora instantly heaved a sigh of relief. "Fortunately, I came back quickly."

Tanya nodded. "Yes, go talk to them..."

As soon as she said this, she heard Nora's next words. "Otherwise, I wouldn't have had the chance to see what their fight looks like!"

Tanya: "???"

Was this something a mother should say?! When Nora entered, Cherry was arguing with Pete.

Pete said sternly, "Cherry, you can't play games every day. You should learn something."

Cherry refused to let go of her phone and hugged it in her arms. "Pete is bad. If you keep trying to control me, I won't love you anymore! Why should humans learn, anyway?!"

Pete lectured her seriously, "It's to make yourself better!"

"And?"

"Then, when you grow up, you can learn many techniques. You can also control everything without being confused by the butler!"

"And then?"

Pete: "After that, you can live a happy and blissful life."

Cherry was being unreasonable. "But I have my parents and you. I'm already living a blissful life!"

Pete: "?"

He could only explain again, "Cherry, you have to make your life valuable. You can't live every day in vain! This is wrong!"

"Why? Making life valuable is to satisfy your own desires, right? It's also to make you happy? But the value of my existence is to get first place in the game! I'm being needed every day! Without me, Chesty can't even get first place in the national server!" Cherry patted her chest. "I'm very awesome!"

Pete: "...I can't out-talk you, but you have to learn knowledge, especially your English. You have to make up for your idioms and poems!"

"I know how to memorize 300 poems-" Cherry was very persistent.

Pete: "...But you don't know Mathematical Olympiad questions! You don't know how to do programming, and you don't know how to make a robot either. You still have a lot to learn!"

Cherry bit her lip. "Pete, what you're saying is too boring. Boohoo. But I also know someone who's very good with these things. He's a genius!"

With that, she picked up her phone and opened an application. There was a lot of chat content inside. She sent a voice message. "Are you there? My brother wants to compete with you!"

After sending the message, she said to Pete, "I met him overseas. He's five years old this year, just like you! Don't force me to study. Go compete with him!".

The other party replied with a voice message. It was a young voice, but this voice had a hint of ruffianism. "Where did you get a brother from? Don't you only have one brother?" Cherry: "My biological brother. My mother found my biological brother!"

The other party: "Tsk~ So what if he's your biological brother? I'll definitely beat him, but I don't have time to compete with him now."

Cherry: "Why? What are you busy with?"

The person said, "I'm dissecting a small animal. I plan to replace the rabbit's leg with another rabbit's."

Cherry was stunned. "Didn't your father stop you from playing with those things?"

As soon as she said this, the other party replied, "Hehehehe, my father will be away for a few days. I'm simply too free!"

Cherry asked again, "Where did your father go?"

The other party: "God knows. Anyway, that's not important. The important thing is that no one will care about me."

Cherry asked, "Doesn't your mother care about you?"

The other party: "I don't have a mother. I lived with my father alone."

Cherry: "??"

The other party replied, "Alright, let's not talk about it. I'm busy. I'll let your brother come and see how awesome I am another day!"

Cherry put down her phone in resignation.

Beside her, Pete looked at her curiously. "Who is this?"

Cherry tilted her head and explained, "This is a good friend I know from the Internet. His hobby is to grow wheat on cows. He can make the wheat smell like beef, dogs, rabbits, and dogs. He's very smart. He once connected a dog's body to a cat's head for two hours. Unfortunately, they died in the end."

Pete: "... Cherry, stay away from this person!"

Cherry was stunned and asked in confusion, "Why?"

Pete said seriously, "Because this person is either a lunatic, and everything he says is a lie, or he's crazy! Why did he connect the dog's body with the cat's head? Did he torture the two pets to death just for fun?" At these words, Cherry thought of a child torturing two little pets and instantly shuddered.

She swallowed. "Pete, you make it sound so scary!"

Chapter 552 - The Plan of Saving Nora Novel Free

Brenda stared at her. "What? You want to interrogate Nora too? Are you worthy of that?" Ruth lowered her eyes. "How would I dare to do that? I know Ms. Smith's status in the special department is special, and also know very much just how much Captain Ford values her, so how would I possibly dare to interrogate her?"

"Then hurry up and get the hell out of here!" Brenda shouted sharply.

Ruth sighed. "Captain Brenda, all the bodyguards are now saying that Yvette Anderson was the second-in-command in the special department back then. She was also involved in the development of the gene serum and other issues. All of them came to the States just to search for her! Moreover, they also said that she is in possession of all the theories and mechanics of the gene serum! Yvette Anderson alone can establish another mysterious organization!"

Brenda sneered, "So? Yvette Anderson is dead!"

Ruth looked at Nora. "But her daughter is still alive."

Brenda immediately said, "I didn't know that the special department's principles involve imposing parents' crimes onto their children? Even the children of murderers have to be arrested, right?"

Ruth sighed and looked at her helplessly. "As I said, Captain Brenda, we will not be arresting Ms. Smith. We just want to summon her to answer a few of our questions. Isn't it in her interest to clear her of all suspicions as soon as possible?"

To be honest, according to the rules and regulations, Ruth's approach was appropriate. She occupied the moral high ground this time.

On the contrary, Brenda's interception at the moment was a bit unreasonable.

As Yvette's only daughter, even if Nora was not involved with the mysterious organization, she was obligated to assist the special department in their investigations.

But... when Ruth became the interrogator, there was no way Brenda would allow Nora to suffer such grievances. She was about to say more when Nora got up and said, "I want to interrogate the bodyguards."

Ruth and the others were stunned.

A contemptuous smile immediately formed on Ruth's countenance. At once, she said, "What do you mean by that, Ms. Smith? I can understand if you suspect that my proposal is problematic, but this proposal was designed by Black Cat and me. Are you saying that you doubt Black Cat's interrogation abilities?"

She was exactly the one that Nora was suspicious of! She narrowed her eyes and said, "I have never doubted Black Cat's abilities."

Only then did Ruth nod. "In that case, you don't need to interrogate them. Captain Brenda, if you really refuse to let us take her away, that's okay too. I will ask her a few questions right now and right in front of you. Surely that would do, right?"

Brenda looked at Nora.

Nora stared at everyone outside.

She knew that even she herself would probably have doubted someone in her position, let alone them.

Her mother was a member of the mysterious organization. Even if she wasn't, what was certain at the moment was that she was undoubtedly connected to the mysterious organization!

On top of that, she was being so mysterious. They definitely wouldn't fully trust her.

She nodded. "Ask away."

As expected of someone who once dared to say on a public forum that Black Cat's interrogation methods were problematic, Ruth was certainly skilled when it came to interrogation methods. She went straight to the crux of the matter and asked, "Ms. Smith, I'd like to ask, do you have any impression of your mother?" Nora remained seated on Brenda's sofa, her posture like a big boss. Her voice was cool and crisp as she slowly replied, "If one could retain their

memories from when they were a six-month-old baby, then perhaps I might still have had an impression of her.”

Yvette had died a few months after she was born. How would she possibly have any impression of her?

Ruth then asked, “Did she leave you anything?”

Yes, an audio recording.

However, Nora lowered her eyes. She didn’t want them to know the content of the recording.

Besides, she was certain that there was nothing related to the case in the recording. She looked straight at Ruth and answered, “Yes, but it has nothing to do with the case.”

Ruth’s voice instantly turned stern and severe. “Ms. Smith, please cooperate with our investigation! We will decide whether or not it has anything to do with the case after we verify it. Please tell us what your mother left you and where it is!”

Nora looked straight at her.

Ruth, however, was not afraid. She continued to stare at her as well.

Nora lowered her eyes.

Suddenly, it occurred to her that the Grays had wanted Anthony to marry her even after she became pregnant back then. They must have wanted something that her mother had left behind, right?

Later, Anthony had demanded the small pharmaceutical company that her mother had left behind. She had gone to the company premises and searched it before, though, but she hadn’t found anything useful.

And now, Ruth was asking her if her mother had left her anything...

Although she knew that this was a step in the interrogation process and was also a necessary procedure; had it been someone else who had asked her that question, she might not have thought too much into it. But if it was Ruth...

as

Why was she getting the feeling that Ruth was also trying to sound her out to find out what that thing was?!

Nora did not speak.

The atmosphere suddenly died down.

Even Brenda looked at Nora and said, “Nora, if it’s not very important, why don’t you show it to them?”

“No,”

Nora replied, “This involves my privacy. It is also my personal belonging. I have the right to refuse to show it to anyone.”

She sounded very firm. Even if she were to present the audio recording, she would only let Morris listen to

it.

Brenda fell silent for a while. Then, without any hesitation, she chose to stand in front of her. She faced Ruth and said, “Nora does indeed have the right to do that.”

Ruth, however, said aggressively, “Finding the roots of the mysterious organization and taking all of them down in one fell swoop is what matters the most right now. Ms. Smith, as a member of the special department, can’t you just cooperate with us?”

She spoke as if Nora would be the special department’s sinner if she did not cooperate with them.

The others also looked at her.

Ruth went on. “Also, don’t you find your past very weird? How did you meet Dr. Silvester Zabe when you grew up in California? And how did you learn everything you know about surgery? Dr. Zabe is in New York; surely he couldn’t have run all the way to California to take you as his disciple, right?!”

Why not...

It wasn’t just Silvester but also Quinn and...

Nora cast her eyes down and said nothing.

Ruth went on. "In addition, you came to New York at a time that is really too coincidental. We have already done the calculations. Not long after you came, Caleb Gray also arrived. After Gray came, Trueman Yale brought his bodyguards with him and came here too. Since then, Yale has been in constant contact with you. May I know why this is?!" Every word Ruth spoke was insinuating that there was something between her and Trueman.

Nora cast her eyes down and sneered, "If it's about that, you can ask Captain Ford about it."

She had always kept Morris in the loop about her communication with Trueman.

However, Ruth said, "Are you planning to have Captain Ford protect you? What bad timing, though, because something came up, he is out today. Therefore, you must explain this clearly today. Otherwise, I'm afraid you won't be able to leave the special department." After Ruth spoke very aggressively, she stepped aside. At once, a group of SWAT officers from the special department came forward from behind her.

Brenda frowned. "Ruth, what is the meaning of this?"

Ruth adopted a very aggressive attitude and replied, "Captain Brenda, I am in charge of all interrogation matters. Captain Ford has also given me the right to act according to my will! Now that Nora is involved with the key figures of the case, she can only be released after she has been thoroughly interrogated. Otherwise, we have firm grounds to believe that she has relations to the mysterious organization!"

Brenda went forward and stopped right in front of Nora. "Try taking another step forward! I'm going to see which one of you has the guts to take her to the interrogation room when I'm standing right here?!"

"We won't take her away."

Ruth said, "We will interrogate her right here in your office. Give it some good thought, Ms. Smith. We will only be able to trust you if you hand over what your mother has left you!"

After speaking, she took a step back and left straightaway.

Brenda frowned and looked at the SWAT officers at the door. She knew that they were there to monitor them.

Infuriated, she whipped out her cell phone at once and said, "I will call Captain Ford right now and get him to come back!" Unfortunately, after she took out her cell phone, she realized that there was no signal at all.

She was stunned for a moment. Then, she suddenly realized what was happening. "F*ck! They actually jammed the signal in my office?!"

She looked at Nora and said, "Two days ago, when you were in a deep sleep, Captain Ford received a call for help from the border. Someone who appears to be from the mysterious organization has allegedly shown up there, so he took some men with him and immediately went over as reinforcement. Before he left, because Ruth looked like she was doing a decent job of interrogating the suspects, Captain Ford temporarily gave her the rights to interrogation. But I didn't expect that she would actually start targeting you!"

Brenda went out with her cell phone at once. She said, "Wait for me here, Nora. I'll go out and find a signal and call Captain Ford! I'll make him come back right away. Even if he can't, I will make him call the department and release you!"

Nora, however, leaned back on the sofa lazily and stared at the ceiling.

Even if they couldn't get him on the phone, Morris would have to come back the next day anyway.

No biggie, she would just sleep the day away!

After Brenda left her office, she went to the special department's entrance. But when she dialed Morris' number, she found that his cell phone had been switched off.

She broke into a frown.

When she turned to go back, she found the SWAT officers blocking her way.

Brenda narrowed her eyes and stared at the two of them. "How dare you stop me?"

The two replied, "Captain Brenda, we are in the process of interrogating Nora Smith at the moment. You are not from the interrogation unit, so you are not allowed to enter your office."

Brenda immediately sneered, "Is that so?"

She rolled up her sleeves at once and said, "Let's see if you two can stop me, then!"

Then, she went on the offensive right away.

In no time, she had flipped the two officers onto the floor. Only then did Brenda dust her hands off and continue walking forward.

However, the other people at the door blocked her way once more. Brenda stared at them. "Are you sure you want to go against me?"

The few of them looked at one another. At last, they sighed and said, "Captain Brenda, we were assigned this task! We will unconditionally obey all orders related to interrogation!"

Brenda: "!!"

She was livid. She let out an icy laugh and said, "Fine. Then you guys can come and try me!" But as soon as she said that, Nora's calm and dispassionate voice traveled over. "Forget it."

Taken aback, Brenda looked at her.

With the SWAT officers in between them, Nora said to her, "You will only be detained along with me if you come back. It's more comfortable outside. Why don't you go home for now?"

"You have been detained? How does Ruth have the right to detain you?!"

Nora shrugged. "Who knows?"

Brenda took a deep breath, turned, and started walking out. "I'll go and look for Justin right away, Nora!"

Seeing that Brenda had left, Nora returned to the room.

She closed the curtains and looked at Brenda's white sofa.

That woman sure knew how to enjoy life. There was even a white fluffy blanket on the sofa that suited lying down just right. Nora could almost imagine Brenda's lazy and charming appearance as she lay down on it. She shook her head, walked over, and lay down.

She would just catch up on sleep.

In the other room, Ruth stared at the monitor showing what was happening in Brenda's office.

The surveillance cameras were newly-installed, but she could already see Nora lying on the sofa.

She bit her lip. Suddenly, she said to the person next to her, "Go there and do this..."

When she was done speaking, a hesitant look came over the countenance of the person next to her. "Isn't that kinda inappropriate, Ruth? Nora is also a member of the special department after all."

Ruth looked at him at once. "Do you still think of her as part of the special department? Don't forget, her mother is the backbone of the mysterious organization! If it weren't for her mother, the gene serum would never have emerged into the world! How many people have died because of the gene serum all these years? And how many children did they kidnap for human experiments back then?!"

Ruth gritted her teeth hatefully. "More than twenty years ago, as many as a thousand children had gone missing in the country. It was only in the end that it was discovered that they had been captured by the mysterious organization. It was only after they conducted brutal and inhumane experiments on the children that the gene serum was created! The members of the mysterious organization are simply devoid of all conscience! All these years, in order to capture the mysterious organization, how many of our comrades have we sacrificed? Now that Nora Smith holds clues to the mysterious organization, why should she be allowed to keep mum about it? Just do what I say! I will bear all the consequences!"

The person felt that Ruth was right, yet also not.

For a while, he didn't know what to say. In the end, he could only say, "... Alright, I guess.'

Elsewhere, Nora was lying on the sofa.

While she was resting, someone suddenly rushed into the room.

Nora opened her eyes to see a few people from the special department. They took a lamp and switched it on with a loud snap. After the lamp was switched on, piercing light illuminated the whole room, making it as bright as day!

Nora frowned.

She knew that this was an interrogation tactic. High-intensity light like this would irritate people and make them uncomfortable. Even if they closed their eyes, they wouldn't be able to fall asleep.

She clicked her tongue coldly.

So, was Ruth planning to use these interrogation tactics on her?

She raised her eyebrows and looked at the person who had switched on the lamp. The person glanced at her and tried to persuade her. "Ms. Smith, why don't you show us what your mother left you? Don't try to tough it out anymore. Even if Captain Ford comes back, he still has to act according to the regulations!"

Nora replied detachedly, "No."

The man sighed. He could only leave the room.

At the door, Ruth stood there and looked at her with a smile. "Ms. Smith, we have no choice but to do this. After all, this is a standard tactic. I hope you can understand! Of course, if you hand it over now, I can remove the lamp at once." Nora lowered her eyes and said nothing.

Seeing how she looked as if she didn't want to talk, Ruth said, "Since you haven't decided to make the right decision yet, you can continue to give it more thought!"

After speaking, she left and closed the door with a bang.

Ruth had already asked around a long time ago

-sleep was the most important thing to Nora. Now that she couldn't sleep, she would definitely be exceptionally anxious while being detained in there!

In the room.

Nora leaned on the sofa and stared at the lamp.

The light was very glaring. After she closed her eyes for a while, she found that she really couldn't quite fall asleep. Moreover, with such a strong light stimulating her senses, she started to become a little irritated, making her seem a little impatient.

She decided not to put up with this anymore.

Initially, Nora had thought that even though it was obvious that Ruth was making things difficult for her, she was indeed acting according to regulations.

After interrogating the suspects and finding out that the mysterious organization's ultimate mastermind was Yvette, she should indeed interrogate Nora.

But Nora was not just anybody. She was internal personnel of the special department.

Even if they wanted to interrogate her, they should have asked Morris for permission first. After all, she was someone whom Morris had specially recruited!

When Ruth detained her and forbade her from leaving, she could understand and think of it as Ruth trying to prevent her from taking the opportunity to escape in case she really was involved with the mysterious organization.

Therefore, she had intended to cooperate with them in the beginning.

After all, once Morris returned, the truth would come to light.

That was why she had comforted Brenda and told her to leave just now.

But Ruth was actually installing a light like that in her room?

What kind of attitude was that?

Even in a normal interrogation, they should not be employing torture methods when there was no evidence of her involvement with the mysterious organization!

Nora closed her eyes and experienced for herself the pain and agony of someone under interrogation. Ten minutes later, she ultimately decided not to go against herself anymore.

Thus, she picked up her cell phone, tapped away on it a little, and sent out a signal from the room whose signal had been jammed. About five minutes later.

The SWAT officers from the special department looked warily at Nora who had exited the room.

She stood there, thin and frail and standing at a height of 5'7, yet all the men felt pressured by her presence.

“What’s going on?”

Ruth came over and asked. At the sight of Nora, her pupils shrank. “A-are you actually thinking of escaping? Nora, do you have a guilty conscience?!”

Nora flexed her wrists a little. “No, I just think that getting this over with quickly would be better.”

Ruth was taken aback. “What do you mean ‘get it over with quickly’?!”

As soon as she said that, Nora, who was in front of her, suddenly hooked her toes around the chair next to her. Then, she applied some force and the chair flew straight towards Ruth!

Ruth screamed and tried to duck. But would the target of Nora’s attack be able to avoid her?!

Bang!

The chair crashed into Ruth, grazing her forehead and making her head buzz from the impact. She demanded furiously, “Nora, what are you doing?! Are you trying to break out of jail?!”

After shouting at her, she looked behind her at the SWAT officers and shouted, “What are you people still in a daze for? She is attacking us! Hurry up and arrest her!”

The SWAT officers took a step forward. Just as they were about to attack, Nora suddenly whipped out her cell phone-Morris' face was displayed on the screen.

Nora hadn't had enough sleep, so she was very grumpy at the moment.

She felt a lot better after she hit Ruth. Only then did she say, "Captain Ford, go ahead and tell them what you have to say!"

At the sight of Morris, Ruth's pupils shrank.

... Impossible!

There was no signal at the area where Morris was. She had only started to target Nora after she confirmed that Morris was unreachable by phone, so how did she manage to give him a video call?!

On the screen, Morris' lip corners were also twitching The woman obviously could have taken out her cell phone right away, yet she had to get violent instead...

Never mind.

Morris coughed and said, "Nora is someone that I specially recruited. Before recruiting her into the special department, I have already thoroughly investigated everything about her! She has nothing to do with the mysterious organization! In addition, I have been constantly kept in the loop about her communication with Trueman Yale. It was also because of her contact with Yale that we were able to pinpoint his place of residence and arrest those suspects."

His words clearly explained what had happened to everyone.

The members of the special department's interrogation unit understood at once that they didn't need to interrogate Nora at all. The members of the special department didn't have any feelings for Nora. After all, she was cold and distant in nature. Although she held a position in the special department, she hardly came to work.

However, the members of the special department trusted Morris a lot, especially after the Johnson incident.

Therefore, what Morris said must be true.

Moreover, given Morris' high position in the department, if he was willing to be Nora's guarantor, then they should not be interrogating Nora anymore.

Ruth also understood this. Even though she was filled with hatred, she knew that she had already missed the opportunity to do anything, so she did not dare to say any more.

Without Johnson providing her cover, everything she did now must be logical and reasonable in order for her to be able to stand her ground.

Thus, she said, "Since Captain Ford has put it that way, then Ms. Smith can go. However, since her mother is related to the case, then it stands to reason that Ms. Smith should stay away from the investigation to avoid suspicion! Therefore, shouldn't Ms. Smith stop participating in further interrogations related to the case, Captain Ford?" Even if she couldn't bring her down, she would drive her away!

Morris hadn't even spoken yet when Nora herself said, "Sure."

Nora looked at the people in front of her lazily.

To be honest, there were indeed people who really couldn't fit into the team atmosphere after joining the group halfway.

Moreover, she had always come and gone alone. During this period of time in the special department, she hadn't felt any concern from them at all, either. All she had experienced was just pressure and restrictions.

She had already wanted to leave the special department a long time ago.

However!

Nora went on. "Let me interrogate those people before I go. After I am sure that they are telling the truth, I will leave." Her mother was indeed involved with the mysterious organization.

Otherwise, she wouldn't have told her to keep a low profile, bide her time, and avoid standing out, lest she attracted the mysterious organization's attention and put herself in danger.

But if her mother really was the leader of the mysterious organization, then why hadn't she gone abroad and met up with the mysterious organization after she fled from New York back then?

Given how the mysterious organization could move Trueman to places without anyone realizing it, wouldn't it also be a piece of cake for them to move her mother somewhere else back then?

Yet they hadn't!

Not only had they not done that, but Yvette had even gone to California, where she spent the rest of her life. On top of that, she even married a little ruffian like Henry Smith and entrusted herself to him.

Something was definitely wrong!

While she was contemplating, Ruth said sarcastically, "Ms. Smith, I have already talked about this just now. Even if you don't trust me, don't you trust Black Cat? It's impossible for the interrogation proposal that I designed with Black Cat to have flaws."

Black Cat...

Tsk.

After the spotlight incident, she felt extremely disgusted that how the woman was using her to brag.

Nora's lip corners suddenly curled into a smile and she sneered, "Do you really know Black

Cat?"

Ruth raised her chin at once. "Of course. Black Cat and I are very good friends. Our colleagues have already seen us when we were discussing the proposal together the other time..." But as soon as she said that, Nora retorted dispassionately, "But Black Cat doesn't know

you!"

Black Cat didn't know her?

Ruth's pupils shrank and her head whipped towards Nora. She clenched her fists nervously and retorted, "What? I don't understand what you're saying!"

"Oh, you don't? Then I'll explain it to you carefully."

Nora hadn't slept well, and on top of that, she had only eaten a bowl of oatmeal after she woke up, so she was a little tired. She suddenly pulled a chair next to her over and sat with the back of the chair facing her. She propped her arms on the back of the chair and slowly said, "You're aware that Karl has been acquitted,

right?"

Black Cat was the number one assassin in Karl's Assassin Alliance. However, outsiders were completely unaware that Karl had never actually met Black Cat before.

Following what Nora was saying, everyone immediately understood that she had met the real Black Cat before.

Everyone in the special department gasped.

Nora stared at Ruth. The wound on her forehead was still bleeding. She was holding a tissue against the wound, but her eyes were already starting to become evasive. Nevertheless, she said insistently, "Yeah, I know that, but I have no idea what you are trying to say."

Nora sighed. She said solemnly, "Aren't you very smart? Yet you don't even understand something as simple as this? Then let me put it more bluntly for you!"

She slowly said, "Black Cat said that they don't know you at all. So, which Black Cat did you design the so-called interrogation plan with?"

Ruth choked on her breath.

Of course, she knew that the Black Cat she had spoken with was a fake.

She was about to use the same trick again when Nora said lightly, "Surely that Black Cat of yours didn't also deceive you, right?"

Ruth: "!!"

During all her previous interactions with Nora, she had always found the woman very stupid, and thought that she didn't really know how to speak properly. She didn't expect that she would also know how to diss someone!

Her rhetorical question had rendered Ruth speechless. Her throat moved a little, but even after a long while, she still couldn't squeeze even a word out of her mouth.

It was surprisingly Nora who couldn't be bothered with her anymore. She looked straight at her cell phone and said to Morris, "I'm going to interrogate those few suspects."

"Okay."

Morris agreed without any hesitation.

Ever since the Johnson incident, because of Morris' meritorious contributions, the word "acting" had been removed from the front of his job title. He could now make the decisions for everything pertaining to the special department.

Now that he had spoken, those who had obeyed Ruth's instructions were no longer under her control.

Nora walked straight to the interrogation room.

Morris picked a few people to work with her.

As for Ruth, she remained where she was.

Mark and a few others who had cooperated with Ruth also awkwardly stood where they were. In particular, the staff member who had installed the spotlight in Nora's room for Ruth just now felt even more embarrassed. He couldn't help but stare at Ruth and say, "As it turns out, you don't know Black Cat at all? You are so full of lies. Which sentence of yours is actually true?!"

Ruth bit her lip.

She clenched her fists tightly. A short while later, she suddenly looked at the man and retorted, "Regardless of whether I know Black Cat or not, the interrogation proposal I produced has indeed yielded useful information, and that is what I am capable of!"

The way people all around looked at her suddenly changed.

In particular, Damon immediately said, “Previously, I thought you were just deceived by a fake Q, but you actually used the same trick time and again. I have finally seen your true colors!”

Ruth knew that she couldn’t carry on the act anymore. With nothing else to lose, she threw the handle after the blade.

She took a deep breath and said, “Yes, I don’t know Q or Black Cat, I made up all of it! But my ability is real! There is absolutely no problem with that interrogation proposal!”

Then, she looked at Nora’s back and followed after her.

The others also followed after her.

Ruth stared at Nora and sneered, “You just don’t give up, do you? So, you don’t believe that all of this has something to do with your mother and that your mother is the mysterious organization’s second-in-command? Okay then, go ahead and interrogate them yourself! Let’s see what you can get out of them!”

There was anger in her words.

But at the same time, there was confidence!

Her interrogation methods were viable and were the real deal! Besides, the bodyguards had all been trained by the mysterious organization, and would never easily reveal the mysterious organization’s location. How would they possibly tell the truth?

By stupidly going over to interrogate them, Nora was doing nothing more than a final struggle.

She knew that whatever Nora was about to do was nothing more than a few tips the real Black Cat had given her. However! When it came to interrogation, the actual person had to be present in order for it to work.

Black Cat’s capabilities weren’t something that one could learn with just a few words. If that was possible, Black Cat could just publish a book. Why would everyone have to admire Black Cat so much?

Black Cat had their own style and momentum!

Therefore, Ruth was confident that nothing would come out of Nora's interrogation!

Nora ignored her. Before she entered the interrogation room, her cell phone vibrated. She looked down to see that it was actually a reply from Trueman.

This time, Trueman did not dodge her questions. Instead, he answered her questions directly. Her question was: 'Who plotted my pregnancy?'

Trueman's answer, however, made her pupils shrink.

Nora cast her eyes down. A moment later, she put down her cell phone and instructed the people accompanying her, "You guys wait outside. I will go in alone."

The special department staff members wanted to say something, but the video call with Morris was still connected, so he said, "Do as she says." With that, all of them stood outside the door.

Nora entered the interrogation room and closed the door.

The moment the door closed, all the sounds outside were cut off. All the sounds inside the interrogation room were also isolated.

Ruth stared nervously at the door to the interrogation room.

She knew that if Nora got a different answer from hers in her interrogation, then she would most likely be fired from the special department.

But... there was no way Nora would be able to get anything out of them.

She comforted herself.

In the interrogation room.

Nora sat opposite one of the bodyguards. The bodyguard, who was shackled down with iron chains, was seated opposite her. The two looked at each other. Suddenly, Nora asked, "You said that my mother was involved with the mysterious organization, right?"

The bodyguard nodded. "Yes."

Nora cast her eyes down. "Is that really true?"

The bodyguard nodded again. "Yes, it is. Our purpose in coming to the United States this time is precisely to take over what she has left behind. You are her descendant! So that makes you a member of the mysterious organization too!"

Nora stared at him. "I will ask you once more -is what you just said true?"

"Yes, it's true."

The bodyguard answered firmly.

"Oh, okay." Nora got onto her feet and disconnected the video call with Morris. Then, she flexed her wrists and said, "In that case, the interrogation officially begins now."

"The interrogation officially begins"?

The bodyguard was dumbfounded. Before he could understand what was going on, Nora suddenly came up to him. With a lazy demeanor and a bit of impatience in her facial expression, she stretched out her hand...

"Ahhhh!!"

A sharp cry of pain came from the interrogation room.

Even the interrogation room's great soundproofing couldn't completely drown out the cry, which went to show just how loud the man in the interrogation room had been.

The people outside became nervous at once.

Damon and Mark went up to the door to the interrogation room and looked inside worriedly. They called out, "Ms. Smith? Ms. Nora Smith? Are you okay?"

But apart from cries of pain, no other sound came out of the room.

Damon couldn't help but ask, "That guy couldn't have broken free and assaulted Ms. Smith, right?"

A look of worry also came over Mark's countenance.

Ruth stood at the side and scoffed inwardly. Here she was, thinking that Black Cat had really imparted a skill or two to Nora. As it turned out, they had just told her to torture them, that was all.

This was against the law!

Nora must have given up on herself after making up her mind to leave the special department, right?

When it came to things like torture, every report made was taken seriously.

Besides, with the way how those bodyguards from the mysterious organization were, it was impossible that one could make them talk just by torturing them. If it was possible, the special department personnel would have done it a long time ago.

She had a lot of faith in the well-trained members of the mysterious organization.

While she was thinking about it, cries of pain traveled over from the room one after another. She leaned against the wall outside leisurely.

After waiting for a full ten minutes, the door to the interrogation room suddenly opened.

Nora walked out of it calmly.

There seemed to be a little displeasure on her countenance, making the hearts of the people outside sink.

Ruth, however, became excited. She immediately said, "Nora, did you get anything out of them? Or did you not manage to get them to say anything at all? Or did you get the same answer as I did just now? Also, you tortured him just now, right? Is the information received through such methods reliable? Will he give you false evidence?"

Nora stared at her. "I didn't torture him."

"You didn't?" Ruth sneered, "How can that be? The man's voice was close to shooting up to the high heavens just now, we all heard it. Are you still trying to deny it?! Heh, I'm going in to have a look!"

She went straight into the interrogation room.

Damon and Mark also followed behind her closely. What the two of them were thinking, though, was that if Nora had really tortured the suspect, then they must find a way to cover it up for her.

Unexpectedly, when the three of them entered the interrogation room, they instead found the bodyguard drenched in sweat. Cold sweat was dripping from his forehead, but he actually didn't look like he had suffered any injuries!

Ruth refused to give up. She took a step forward and checked the person's vitals, but she couldn't find anything wrong with him.

Ruth hesitated.

Did she really not torture him?

Why was Nora so mysterious in everything she did, though? She really didn't know what she had done just now. However, Ruth suddenly didn't dare to let her make contact with the other suspects anymore. She frowned and looked straight at Damon. She said, "Nora must not have gotten anything out of them, but we clearly heard something just now. Therefore, we mustn't let her interrogate the rest of the suspects!"

Damon lowered his head. He, who had no affection for Ruth whatsoever, didn't feel like listening to Ruth talk at all at the moment.

Ruth wanted to say more, but Nora's low voice had already traveled over. "He has confessed everything. Re-interrogate him and get a statement from him." Everyone: "???" Ruth: "??!"

After Nora said that, she glanced at the bodyguard in the interrogation room.

The simple glance from her actually made the bodyguard shudder all over. The big burly man had always been rational and aggressive before this, but it was as if he had become a completely different person.

Stunned, Ruth asked, "What did she do to you?"

What did she do to him?

The thought of what had taken place just now terrified the bodyguard.

He swallowed and suddenly said, "I'll confess! I'll confess everything! Don't let her interrogate me anymore! She's the devil himself! The devil!!!"

Half an hour later, a dispirited Ruth walked out of the interrogation room with the others.

All of them had rather awful looks on their faces as they looked at Ruth. Mark said, "I will send the new information from the interrogation to Captain Ford right away. As for how you will be dealt with, it's up to Captain Ford."

After speaking, he hurriedly walked to the side and called Morris to give him a report.

The others stared at Ruth.

Five minutes later, Mark returned.

He stared at Ruth and said, "Captain Ford says that the special department does not need a hypocrite like you. Please leave!!"

Ruth might have deceived them, but her academic qualifications were real. Her claims of knowing Q and Black Cat were all made verbally, so there was no actual accountability to be held.

It was just like how a lot of ordinary people would brag and claim that they knew certain high-ranking officials. Even if one saw through their lies, could they arrest him?

As long as they didn't make use of that to break the law, no one could arrest them.

Ruth hadn't broken the law either. If one must say that she had made a mistake, then it would just be negligence at work at most. Her academic qualifications and so on were all real. The interrogation plans she had produced were also all rigorous and backed up by science. It was just that the information she received from the interrogation was different from the final answer.

Ruth bit her lip. Even without her looking up, she could still feel the gazes from the people around her. She balled up her hands and suddenly shouted, "You can't do this to me! Captain Ford can't do this to me! Be it my interrogation methods or the statements, none of it is wrong! Nora's mother really is the mysterious organization's second-in-command! There is no doubt about that!"

Seeing that she was still unrepentant, Mark sighed and said, “But she has already betrayed the mysterious organization! You didn’t manage to get them to tell you this critical fact! That makes the statement you got the complete opposite!”

Yes, that’s right...

Yvette had indeed been the second-in-command in the mysterious organization. In fact, she had even been a key figure in the gene serum’s research and development. However, she had later betrayed the mysterious organization and fled back to the United States. After being arrested in the country, the reason why she had fled from prison was also to escape the mysterious organization’s pursuit! That was why she had escaped to California!

Also!

When Yvette escaped, she had taken away a key part of the mysterious organization’s research and development of the gene serum. As a result, their gene serum research and development had been missing something all these years. All the gene serums they had developed were also incomplete.

This was why the people who consumed the gene serum either went crazy or died. Why had Yvette betrayed the mysterious organization? The bodyguards did not know the reason. All they knew was that the purpose of them coming to the United States was to take back from Yvette’s successor everything that had belonged to the mysterious organization.

It could be said that based on Ruth’s interrogation results, Nora had become the enemy of the special department.

But when one looked at the final interrogation results instead, not only was Nora not their enemy, but she was even in the same camp as the special department.

These were two completely different conclusions.

As for whether it was Ruth’s lack of ability that led to her failure to uncover the final conclusion or a deliberate act on her part, Morris couldn’t be bothered to pursue this.

At least, on the surface, she was no longer suitable to stay in the special department.

Meanwhile.

Nora was outside the interrogation room. She had also interrogated the other bodyguards. The answers she got from them were the same.

She clenched her jaw.

She picked up her cell phone and loo Trueman's reply to her text message:

"Your pregnancy was out of everyone's expectations. After an investigation into it, we were able to confirm that your mother was the one who had set up the whole thing. You should be aware that she made a deal with Caleb, but she deceived him, as well as the rest of us all. The original agreement between Caleb and her was that once you came of age, she would return to the organization what she had stolen while you married into the Grays. But for some reason, she broke the agreement. Your mother has never been someone trustworthy!"

Nora stared at the text message.

What she remembered of her mother was that she had fled to California behind Ian's back. She was the one who had left her the audio recording in California, as well as the one who had made various arrangements for her future.

After she came to New York, she had also learned from other people what her mother had been like. Therefore, the image she had of her mother had gradually started to take a clear shape in her mind.

Even if she had never felt her mother's embrace before, the impression she had of her mother was now that of a strong, independent, powerful, and unrestrained woman.

She was the center of attention that even young and talented men like Ian had pursued. It could be said that she was someone whom almost everyone looked up to.

The Carefree Pill she had developed on a whim had become sought after by all after she improved its formula.

Her prowess in alternative medicine was recognized by everyone in the field. Even Jon, no matter how much he disliked her, always looked like he thought of her as a talented person whenever he mentioned her.

Everyone who had lived in the same era as her mother called her a legend whenever they mentioned her.

She was just like the sun-alive and vibrant, yet also enviable.

People only had praise for her whenever they mentioned her name!

Yet, she had really once been a member of the mysterious organization... On top of that, she had even made use of a method like artificial insemination to make her daughter pregnant!

She took a deep breath, Caleb's words suddenly flashing across her mind: "... the final truth will definitely be cruel."

Nora clenched her hands into fists.

No matter the reason for her betrayal to the mysterious organization, her decision was right. For the special department, the fact that she was not an enemy was cause for celebration.

But for her...

Why on earth would she want to plot against her own daughter like that?!

She had always hated how her life was out of her own control. Becoming pregnant was the only thing in her life that had deviated from her expectations.

She could only say that she was fortunate that Justin was the children's father. But... what if she hadn't fallen in love with Justin her whole life? Would those two children have been destined to grow up without a mother or a father?!

For a moment there, her feelings towards Yvette became rather complicated.

At this time, Morris finally came back.

He looked like he was in a hurry. From the looks of it, he had just gotten off the helicopter. After entering the special department, he immediately made eye contact with Nora.

Then, he took a deep breath and said, "You can't leave."

Nora didn't respond. She was uninhibited by nature, and such a lifestyle of having to adhere to rules and regulations in everything she did actually didn't suit her.

Compared to working in the special department, she would prefer to sleep instead.

Besides, now that they had figured out the truth, she didn't feel that there was a need for her to stay anymore.

She didn't speak, her stance clear.

Morris gazed at her. A while later, he finally heaved a sigh. "Never mind. It's only because certain people in the department disappointed

you."

His gaze swept towards Mark and the others nearby

Mark and the others hung their heads at once.

Cooperating with Ruth to interrogate Nora was indeed something that filled them with guilt.

Nora said, "It's nothing." She wasn't planning on holding those things against them because she had never once regarded Mark and the others as friends.

Seeing how indifferent she was, Morris kept quiet for a moment before he finally said, "If you want to leave, then why don't you pay Caleb Gray one last visit? He probably has something to tell you." Caleb?

Nora was a little surprised. She then turned and walked towards Caleb's interrogation room.

In the hall.

With a sharp look in his eyes, Morris stared at the people who had cooperated with Ruth. He pointed at them and said, “Do you guys know what you have done wrong?!”

However, they didn’t know what Morris was upset about. Someone among them even said with dissatisfaction, “Captain Ford, we were just following procedure. We can apologize to Ms. Smith.”

“It’s too late.”

Morris knew that Nora would never turn back once she made up her mind.

He also knew that everything that took place in the special department during this period of time had immensely disappointed her.

Those people curled their lips disdainfully. “That’s Ms. Smith being petty, then. Is there anyone here who wouldn’t have the occasional disagreement with one another? How is it that she’s the only...”

But before he could finish his sentence, Morris’ gaze had already swept towards him, causing him to shut up.

“Isn’t she just a forensic doctor? What’s she being so arrogant for?!”

Someone muttered under their breath.

When Morris heard this, he sneered, “A forensic doctor? Do you think she is just a forensic doctor?! The way I see it, you still don’t understand what you have missed out

on!”

“What else could it be...”

The man replied with dissatisfaction.

At the side, as Damon stared after Nora, for some reason, he couldn’t help but feel like there was some sort of mysterious and unfathomable aura around her. He suddenly asked, “She’s... not Q, is she?”

Morris didn’t say anything.

He did not deny it, but he did not refute him either.

Damon's eyes gradually widened. He thought of some of the things they had done to Nora after she joined the special department and he held his head in regret. "If... if she really is Q, then... my god, what have I done to her?!" The person next to him was taken aback when he heard him. However, even though Q was a god to the people in the IT department, they were nothing to them. Thus, he said, "What's the big deal about people like Q and Y? At the bottom of it all, they are just hackers. For the special department, it's Black Cat who is the most impressive! As long as she isn't Black Cat, our loss is negligible!"

But as soon as he said that, someone nearby poked him.

In a low voice, he said, "After she interrogated the bodyguards just now, the bodyguards called her the devil and revealed everything..."

As soon as he said that, the whole place suddenly fell silent.

A short while later, someone murmured, "S-surely not...? Could it be that..."

"Impossible! If she's Q, how can she be Black Cat?"

Someone could not believe it. "Besides, Miss Smith doesn't look like one to dirty her hands. A delicate young mistress can't be the number one killer."

The number one killer was a top-secret agent!

Such a person must have trained every muscle in their body. Furthermore, they probably had to train every day. Miss Smith was so free. She was either sleeping or preparing to sleep at all times. How could it be her?

When this was said, everyone believed it.

After all, in the special department, those who maintained their muscles really needed to train every day. However, Nora looked thin and weak. She could not be that strong.

Someone else said, "She was interrogating those people earlier. Black Cat must have given her some tips!"

This thought seemed to make everyone feel more comfortable and accept it. After all, if Nora was Black Cat, that would be too inconceivable. Therefore, everyone nodded and echoed this thought.

Morris was not sure if Nora was Black Cat, either.

However, in terms of martial arts, Nora was Quinn School of Martial Arts' Big Sister. He felt that since she was Q and Big Sister, there was a high chance that she was Black Cat. After all, Black Cat was a top-secret agent and a special-class killer. No matter what they did, other than strong martial arts and intelligence, they also needed a good grasp of technology.

Forget about the uncertainty.

However...

Morris slowly said, "Black Cat's identity is mysterious. It's not something that can be seen through by any ordinary person. Black Cat isn't someone that just anyone can hire. However, Nora knows Karl. He might be the person who understands Black Cat the most."

When the people heard this, they were a little indignant. "Karl is also one of us now. Can't we just get Karl to invite Black Cat? She knows Black Cat probably through Karl, right?"

As soon as someone said this, Morris's voice turned cold. He smiled sarcastically and said, "You have the cheek to mention Karl?"

Everyone shut their mouths at once.

Morris's gaze swept across everyone's faces coldly and he said word by word, "You guys always say that Nora is useless. Then I'll help you guys count how many things she has done for us since she joined the special department!"

"She was the one who lured Trueman out and gave us a chance to capture him. Regardless of whether she's Q or not, she was the one who gave us Trueman's location. Otherwise, our Internet department wouldn't even be able to compare to the experts on Trueman's side. We couldn't locate him at all! Furthermore, it was her who fixed the network department's bugs!"

Damon's face turned red.

Morris looked at Mark again. "It was also her who set up a trap at the last minute and exposed Captain Johnson's true face. She also proved our hero Karl's innocence. Otherwise, Karl would have been killed by you already, right?! You still want to find Black Cat through Karl? Heh..."

Mark was embarrassed and lowered his head.

“So, what right do you have to judge Nora here? Not to mention her identity, just going by her contribution to the special department, who can compare to her?”

Morris’s every word pierced into the hearts of these people. The entire place fell silent. No one raised any objections.

Morris saw that the people had finally shut their mouths and looked at Mark. “Come here.”

Mark followed behind Morris, and the two of them walked to the side.

Morris suddenly said, “Take a few people and monitor Ruth 24/7! You must catch her!”

Mark looked at him in a daze. “Captain Ford, you’re...”

His eyes lit up. “You’re suspecting Ruth?”

Morris lowered his eyes. Of course, Ruth was suspicious! She first interrogated the four bodyguards, and the answers she got were all aimed at Nora. If Nora had not interrogated the bodyguards again, she might have been implicated by Ruth. She might even have had to leave the country, right?

Moreover, after detaining Nora, she took advantage of the time when his phone had no signal to interrogate Nora. It was as if she was afraid that he would not give her this chance.

Furthermore... he had received news of the mysterious organization and the other party had deliberately set up a signal jammer nearby. Wasn’t this too much of a coincidence?

If Nora had not hacked the jamming device and forcefully contacted him, he might still have been outside!

There were too many coincidences, so many that he could not help but suspect Ruth.

Before Morris could answer, Mark instantly stood up. “Captain Ford, don’t worry. I promise to complete the mission this time!” Morris nodded. On the

other hand, Nora entered Caleb's interrogation room and saw Caleb was reading something. His cough seemed to have improved a lot and was not as frequent as before.

Hearing this, Caleb turned to look at her and said, "Your medicine is not bad."

Before this, Nora had given Sheril a formula and asked her to help concoct a bottle of medicine. Although it could not treat lung cancer, it could slow down his cough.

Nora nodded. "I'll further refine it for you later."

Caleb was silent for a moment before suddenly saying, "Then you have to speed up."⁷

Nora: "?"

She was stunned for a moment and looked at Caleb in confusion.

Caleb put down the book and poured a cup of tea for Nora. His treatment here had clearly improved. "I'm afraid I'll leave soon."

Nora paused. "Where are you going?"

"Back to the mysterious organization."

Caleb said slowly.

His words stunned Nora.

If he was imprisoned here, how could he return to the mysterious organization?

Nora had just thought of this when Caleb answered her doubts. "I chatted with Captain Ford."

Nora instantly understood.

Karl's identity had already been revealed, and he was no longer suitable to be a spy overseas. So Morris had instigated Caleb?

Nora was stunned.

Caleb's status in the mysterious organization should be quite high. How could he be persuaded to defect so easily?

As she was thinking, she heard Caleb suddenly say, "Actually, I'm the same as your mother."

The same...

Nora looked at him directly. "What do you mean? Do you know why she betrayed the mysterious organization back then?"

"Yes."

Caleb replied calmly and pointed to the chair opposite him. "Sit. There are some things I want to tell you."

Nora was really only here to say goodbye. After all, she had left the special department. It was indeed inconvenient to see him again in the future.

But she did not expect Caleb to suddenly reveal the truth from back then?!

What had Yvette done back then?v

Nora sat opposite Caleb and looked at this man who was getting thinner and thinner because of lung cancer. His deep eyes were filled with helplessness as if he had seen through the world.

Those eyes made him look more refined.

He slowly said, "Do you know how your mother joined the mysterious organization?"

Nora shook her head. "No."

Caleb slowly said, "Actually, she was tricked into it."

Nora was surprised. Caleb continued, "The mysterious organization was a small society. Your mother was deliberately set up with difficult questions and baited by them to join, but she had no idea what the organization was really doing... Your mother was only interested in genetic modification. Human genes always have defects. Think about it, who wouldn't want their genes to be perfect? Your mother was virtuous and her research in medicine had already reached the peak back then."

Everyone in the country said that Dr. Zabe's alternative medicine was the best, but that was not the case. Back then, the best in alternative medicine was actually your mother. It was just that she was still young and could not compare to Dr. Zabe in terms of seniority.

That's why she was targeted by the mysterious organization.

The leader of the mysterious organization was famous for his academic research. He often discussed medicine with your mother and threw out all kinds of difficult questions about the production of gene serums.

Your mother used up all her wits and answered whatever questions she could every time. Over time, your mother started sensing that something was wrong, so she asked the leader.

The leader invited your mother to visit their dream factory overseas. Only then did your mother discover the true identity of the mysterious organization!"

Caleb lowered his eyes. "Do you know what the mysterious organization has done?"

Nora shook her head. "I don't really know."

Caleb took a deep breath and said slowly, "The mysterious organization studied the gene serum. In the beginning, they tested it on adults and realized that their genes had already been rigidly fixed. It was not viable to change them again. Most of the people who had been injected with the gene serum either turned crazy or exploded. Therefore, they changed their strategy. Only experiments on some children could succeed. Therefore, in that year, they bought a thousand children who had been abducted or abandoned all over the world. Most of those children were just born and were not even three years old.

Those children all became the subjects of their experiments. They often injected drugs and extracted blood from them. Some even treated them as Petri dishes to see the effects. They sized up the viruses and bacterias. Some even deliberately injected the ratio virus into them to see if the gene serum can defeat the virus. Some even had their hands and feet chopped off and their organs plucked because the researchers wanted to know if the gene serum had the ability to regenerate their organs... And while doing those experiments, they wouldn't inject the children with anesthetic because the

anesthetic would change the effect of the gene serum... Among a thousand children, only a few survived, and most of them died.”

Nora’s heart clenched tightly when she heard these words.

She had always known that the mysterious organization was filled with evil and was trying to change the human genetic sequence. Furthermore, she had seen with her own eyes that Hillary, Yvonne, and the others had all been harmed by that drug. After entering the special department, she had also checked the information and knew that the mysterious organization was experimenting with children. There were also data about there being about a thousand children.

However, she had never known that the details were so infuriating!

Caleb had said it in too much detail, so much so that an image appeared in her mind.

If it was six years ago when she didn’t have children, she might have only called them animals. However, now, whenever she thought of Cherry or Pete lying on the operating table and being tortured by them, she felt like destroying the mysterious organization!

They were so cruel and inhumane!

Nora’s expression turned cold. “And?”

Caleb took a deep breath. “When your mother saw this, she also felt strange anger. Only then did she realize that she had unintentionally helped a tyrant for so long. However, she also understood that a head-on clash could not resolve the problem. She pretended to cooperate and accepted the leader’s invitation to become the boss of the research and development department and the second-in-command of the entire organization. Then, she found an opportunity to steal the data at the research and development department and fled back to the country with the information.”

Nora clenched her fists. “Then?”

“At that time, the mysterious organization was only thought of as an organization engaged in child trafficking. Your mother was caught by mistake. After she found an excuse to escape, she realized that the people in the

mysterious organization were very resourceful. She could not resist at all and thus she fled. Do you know why she went to California?"

Nora shook her head.

Caleb sighed. "Because she had saved a three-year-old boy from the 1,000 children captured by the mysterious organization. That boy told her to look for his parents in California."

Nora was stunned and looked at Caleb in shock.

Caleb smiled. "That's right. That boy is me."

Nora: "!!"

She stood up in shock and looked at Caleb in disbelief.

Caleb lowered his eyes and slowly said, "When I was three, they injected me with a gene serum and improved my genetic code. They deliberately did not inject the serum all at once. At that time, my parents being quite capable reached the mysterious organization to find me. Unfortunately, by that time, I could no longer leave. My body had been conditioned such that I would die if I stopped taking the serum at regular intervals. I had to be injected with the serum every month to maintain my life."

Perhaps he had said too much at once, and he coughed again.

Nora handed the tea to him.

He took a sip and suppressed the itch in his throat. "And thus, I was tied to the mysterious organization. When my parents found out, they felt helpless. At that time, your mother decided to make a deal with the Grays. The Grays helped her hide her identity and guaranteed to raise you until you were 18 years old. She also left the formula for the last dose of the serum. I was to be injected with the last dose once I turned 25."

When she heard this, Nora suddenly understood everything.

No wonder she had an engagement with Anthony! No wonder the Grays did not break off the engagement even when she got pregnant. What they wanted was the formula for the last dose of the serum!

And the reason why the mysterious organization came to New York and kept looking for her mother was because of that formula!

At this moment, she came to a sudden realization!

But what about her pregnancy? Why did her mother betray the Grays and arrange for her to have a child with Justin? Was there a secret behind this?!

She stared at Caleb.

Caleb waved his hand. "Don't look at me like that. I don't need that drug anymore."

Nora was surprised.

Caleb laughed softly. "I'm one of the few remaining children out of the 1,000. Logically speaking, my transformation was very successful. Unfortunately, I was diagnosed with lung cancer when I was 26. That's why I no longer need that drug."

Nora fell silent.

Suddenly, she felt that the deal between the Grays and her mother was not worth it. They had helped hide their identities for so long, but in the end, fate had played a joke on Caleb.

She lowered her eyes. "If I can find the formula for the last drug, I'll give it to you."

Caleb laughed softly. "Aren't you afraid that I'm still loyal to the mysterious organization and am lying to you about the formula?" Nora stared at him and did not speak for a moment.

Caleb sighed silently. "I won't tease you anymore. I've already hated the mysterious organization deeply. This illness has instead helped me. I can finally get rid of them. However, I've always been living on the edge. I only have two months left to live. I want to use my limited life to help the special department. It could be my help to humanity. Let's make them pay for the thousand children who died in front of me!"

Nora understood. "So Morris will let you go and you'll go undercover?"

“Yes.” Caleb looked at the ground. “Trueman is one of the children of the leader. Back then, the leader threw his children in and injected them with serums. Only Trueman survived, so he’s the second-in-charge of the mysterious organization. This is also the main reason why the mysterious organization has been looking for the last formula your mother left behind! If he doesn’t inject the last dose within half a year, Trueman will die.”

Nora was stunned. “Then you and Trueman...”

Caleb chuckled. “That’s right. I grew up with him. Many of us kept dying every month. In the end, only four have survived till now. Perhaps because of our experiences together, Trueman is still polite to me. Furthermore, because of the serum, I’m smarter than ordinary people. My status in the mysterious organization is higher. But even so, I don’t know where the leader and Trueman’s nest is... My goal for returning this time is to find their foundation so that the special department can cooperate with Interpol and eliminate them all!”

Nora was silent for a long time. The truth she had been searching for was exposed in front of her just like that, but this truth was incomparably cruel.

After a long time, she asked, “How did my mother die back then?”

Caleb was silent for a moment.

Nora stared at him with a determined look. “I want to hear the truth.”

Caleb sighed. “The mysterious organization is very powerful. Back then, your mother leaked some information under the cover of my parents. Seeing that they were about to come looking for you, your mother chose to die to protect you.”

Back then, Yvette had left Ian because she didn’t want to drag him into all of her mess.

Later on, when she was discovered, she knew that she could no longer escape.

She had used her death to stop that pursuit.

Caleb continued, "After your mother died, my parents helped cover all the evidence, and you were safe. But no one expected for the Andersons to recognize you. You even appeared in New York in such a high-profile manner. Yvette had a daughter who was still alive. This attracted the attention of the mysterious organization, and it finally made them discover what had happened back then."

Caleb lowered his eyes. "When he found out that my parents and I had hidden your whereabouts to protect you, the leader wanted to kill me. It was Trueman who begged for mercy and saved my life."

Nora also said, "After you were caught, Trueman sent me a message. He said that he would answer one of my questions in exchange for me to give you medicine. He treats you pretty well."

Caleb sighed. "Yes, this is also why I didn't betray all these years the mysterious organization despite knowing that they were in the wrong."

Nora nodded and asked again, "About my pregnancy..."

"I don't know anything about that," Caleb replied. "I don't understand why you got pregnant. I don't understand why my family has protected you for so many years."

Caleb smiled bitterly. "Back then, Anthony despised you and refused to fulfill the marriage agreement. After this matter blew up too many times, my family even suggested that I take his place and fulfill the marriage agreement."

He looked at Nora, his eyes were suddenly deep. "In the end, we're not fated to be together."

Faced with his words, Nora did not know how to answer.

Caleb muttered to himself, "Fortunately, you didn't marry me."

He coughed.

Nora looked at him and sighed. She did not say anything and patted his shoulder. "When are you leaving? I'll see you off."

"No, it's fine."

Caleb replied slowly, "I'll pretend to escape. Otherwise, Trueman would find out."

Nora nodded.

The two of them were speechless for a moment. Nora simply said, "I'll get going then."

"Okay, goodbye."

When Nora walked to the door, she realized that Caleb had already picked up the book and was back to reading it leisurely.

He looked warm and mellow, and he indeed looked suitable for such a scene.

Nora then went out and did not see Caleb suddenly put down his book after she left. He looked at the door and let out a long sigh.

Then, he covered his chest and coughed violently.

He quickly took out the medicine Nora had prepared for him. He opened it and wanted to take a pill, but he suddenly realized that there was only one pill left in the bottle. He stared at the pill for a while and suddenly laughed at himself. He placed the pill back into the bottle and could not bear to take it. Nora, who was outside the door, did not know this.

She only looked at Morris and asked, "When did Caleb start talking?"

Morris stared at Nora for a while and replied, "The day after you sent him the medicine."

Nora: "..."

She did not speak and just waved at Morris before leaving..

From the moment she left the special department to the parking lot, she did not look back.

Life was not worth looking back at.

Nora arrived at the parking lot and saw Justin's car parked not far away. She had just walked over when she saw Ruth standing in front of Justin. She was

tightly clutching Justin's sleeve. "Mr. Hunt, I knew it. I knew you would definitely come if I locked up Nora. It's too difficult to see you!"

Justin's expression was cold and even a little impatient.

He was about to speak when Ruth shouted, "You can't treat me like this. Have you forgotten that night five years ago? I was the woman that night!"

Nora, who was about to walk over, was speechless.

She stopped in her tracks. Her first thought was not that Justin was dating this woman, but that Ruth was somehow involved in the matter of extracting Justin's sperm and injecting it into her body to make her pregnant?!

How did she get pregnant? How did Justin lose his memories and get schemed against? She was still wondering when this woman exposed herself.

She had really met her match!!

panda`nove1-coM

Justin did not plan to bother with this woman at all.

However, he did not expect Ruth to suddenly say such a shocking thing, making him frown.

Actually, he had dreamed of that night a few times recently. In his dream, he had not been robbed by some cold instrument. Instead, he had slept with a woman! He had brushed it aside thinking it was just a wet dream.

However, when Ruth shouted this, he frowned tightly.

For some reason, at this moment, he recalled very clearly that he had indeed slept with a woman five years ago!

This realization suddenly made him nervous. His heart clenched slightly as he subconsciously looked at Nora.

His first reaction was-would Nora be angry? The second reaction was-if that person was Ruth, he would definitely feel extremely disgusted. Damn it!

However, in his memories, he did not seem to be rejecting her that night...

This thought made him feel like he had swallowed a fly. He felt like his body had betrayed him...

As his thoughts ran wild, the bodyguards who had rushed forward to chase Ruth away were stunned. From what Ruth said, she seemed to have slept with Mr. Hunt?

Should they chase her away or retreat?

Everyone looked at Justin in confusion. However, their big boss was staring straight at Nora in front of him. He did not give them a single glance, making them unable to do anything!

Should they go forward and pull Ruth away or retreat quickly?

Boss, please give some instructions? They didn't want to watch some melodramatic scene here!!

While everyone had their own thoughts, it gave Ruth a chance to showcase her skills. She tried to grab Justin's hand. The man dodged guiltily. Ruth did not get his hand, but she grabbed his sleeve. Ruth looked straight at him. "We've slept together before. Mr. Hunt, have you really forgotten me? Do you really not remember me?!"

Justin: !!

He saw Nora standing there silently in the distance, her gaze fixed on him. He frowned in panic. "Don't talk nonsense!"

"I'm not talking nonsense. I have evidence!"

Ruth was very anxious. She took out her phone directly. "After we slept together back then, I took a photo to remember it."

With that, she handed the photo to Justin.

Justin stared at the photo.

He narrowed his eyes slightly. In the photo, he was lying on the bed, asleep. Ruth was beside him. Her cheeks were slightly red, revealing her fair shoulders. She looked shy and bashful.

Now, there was even evidence.

Justin felt that he could not explain anymore, especially when he met Nora's cold gaze. It actually made him feel that he was... dirty?! Justin felt like he had swallowed half a fly, and he was so disgusted.

He pushed Ruth away and strode towards Nora. "Nora, let me explain..."

Nora waved her hand. "Stay where you are."

Justin was taken aback.

Ruth bit her lip and looked over.

After seeing Nora, her eyes flickered with a fierce and cold light. But then, she looked at her pitifully. "Miss Smith, don't be angry. It was an accident... but... but after that night, I never forgot Mr. Hunt... Mr. Hunt also liked me. That night, he wanted me three times... He even said he would be responsible for me..."

Her eyes turned red immediately. She stared at Nora and said, "I know I'm being very shameless in saying this, but I really love him... I beg you, please help me and Mr. Hunt! You don't love him at all, anyway. You're only with him because of the child..."

She lowered her head and cried.

Justin's expression changed drastically. He pushed her away with disdain as if he was pushing away a pile of trash; as if being stained by her once was already very disgusting and dirty.

He shouted sternly, "Don't talk nonsense! Nora, I'm not, I didn't... five years ago, you know, I had no memories! I was framed!"

Ruth cried even harder. "Mr. Hunt, how could you be like this... You clearly wanted it that night. You seemed intoxicated when you rushed into my room..."

As she spoke, she looked at Nora.

However, this woman, who was usually very cold, was now covered in a layer of frost. She stared at Justin and suddenly sneered before turning to leave.

Justin strode forward, wanting to chase after her.

However, before he could move, Ruth had already grabbed his arm again. "Mr. Hunt, you can't treat me like this!"

When she blocked him, Nora had already gotten into her big black car and driven away.

Justin's expression was very ugly. He lowered his head to look at her, his long phoenix eyes filled with anger and violence. He shouted softly, "Let go!"

Ruth was frightened by his appearance. The mole at the corner of his eye seemed to be filled with killing intent, making her take a step back.

At this moment, Lawrence suddenly walked over in rapid steps and handed the phone to Justin. He whispered, "Mr. Hunt, bad news!"

Justin's eyes narrowed as he looked down. Lawrence explained, "I don't know who sent this message saying that you're suspected of rape. It even has a photo of you and... Miss Ruth from a few years ago!"

Justin looked down. It was a photo of him breaking into Ruth's room.

Lawrence said, "Everyone is speculating now that you often used your power to force women to do in private and even took pictures of them. They say that there are many others that haven't been photographed. They're requesting a strict investigation!"

Justin suddenly looked at Ruth. "You did this?!"

Ruth bit her lip. "Yes, I did it. Mr. Hunt, I can go out there and say that we're boyfriend and girlfriend. Then, it won't be considered rape. Otherwise, you'll definitely be sued!"

Justin frowned.

Ruth stared at him. "Mr. Hunt, can we talk now?"

Justin thought for a moment before saying, "Get in."

Ruth got into Justin's car and they drove all the way to the Hunt manor. When they entered, she turned to look at the scenery outside, a light appearing in her eyes.

She was going to be the mistress here soon!

She did not see that Justin was looking down and sending a message to Nora. "I brought her to the Hunt manor. No matter what we do to her here, no one will know. You can come over. Do you want me to pick you up?"

Nora replied, "No need. I'll come over later."

Just now, outside the special department, although Nora and Justin hadn't said a word, when their eyes met, Justin instantly understood Nora's meaning.

It was outside the special department. The special department was half a police station. It was a fair and strict place. It would be inconvenient to interrogate Ruth there, so it was best to take her away. Therefore, Nora took the opportunity to act. Normal girlfriends would be jealous at that time, right? Therefore, it was normal for her to be angry and leave.

Subsequently, Ruth directed and acted in a public opinion battle. It seemed like she was forcing Justin to lower his head, but Justin was only beating her at her own game and taking advantage of the situation.

Justin put down his phone and narrowed his eyes again.

Ruth should be thankful because if not for Nora coming to interrogate her about her role in what had happened back then, he really wanted to kill Ruth on the spot!

Unfortunately, Ruth seemed unaware of this fact.

The car arrived at the Hunt manor and drove into Justin's residence.

The car stopped and Justin got Ruth out of the car and into the living room. As soon as they entered the living room, Justin was about to call for someone to take Ruth down when Mrs. Hunt's voice suddenly sounded. "Justin, you're finally back!"

With that, she walked over with her walking stick, trembling. "What's with the report on the Internet? What's going on between you and that girl?"

After saying this, she saw Ruth following behind Justin.

Mrs. Hunt was stunned. She frowned in surprise. "This is?"

Ruth immediately stepped forward and held Mrs. Hunt's hand. "Mrs. Hunt, I'm Ruth, and I'm also the girl from the report. Mr. Hunt and I are..."

At this point, she glanced shyly at Justin and then lowered her head. "It's that kind of relationship."

Mrs. Hunt immediately frowned and looked at Justin in surprise and confusion. "Justin, you're..."

Ruth was about to say something when Justin's face turned cold and he said, "Grandma, I have something to discuss here. Please leave for now."

Mrs. Hunt was actually afraid of Justin.

He used to listen to her when he was young, but when he grew up and had his own views, he would never listen to her again. Mrs. Hunt knew very well that apart from respect, Justin's feelings for her were of familial love.

She would not do anything to hurt their relationship, so she said, "Alright, then you guys talk. You guys talk..."

The old lady leaned on her walking stick and walked out slowly.

After she left, Ruth looked at Justin and directly spoke her mind, "Mr. Hunt, I want to be Mrs. Hunt!"

Elsewhere.

Nora returned to the Smiths and saw Tanya standing outside the door. She asked anxiously, "How is it?" Tanya: "They're still arguing." The reason she rushed back was that Tanya had sent her a message saying that the two children had gotten into a fight!

They had a fight!

This was the first time she had heard of it. After all, Cherry was a little cutie who spoke her mind and made people love her.

And Pete was a sensible and obedient little gentleman.

How could the two of them get into a fight?

Hearing the two words "still arguing," Nora instantly heaved a sigh of relief. "Fortunately, I came back quickly."

Tanya nodded. "Yes, go talk to them..."

As soon as she said this, she heard Nora's next words. "Otherwise, I wouldn't have had the chance to see what their fight looks like!"

Tanya: "???"

Was this something a mother should say?! When Nora entered, Cherry was arguing with Pete.

Pete said sternly, "Cherry, you can't play games every day. You should learn something."

Cherry refused to let go of her phone and hugged it in her arms. "Pete is bad. If you keep trying to control me, I won't love you anymore! Why should humans learn, anyway?!"

Pete lectured her seriously, "It's to make yourself better!"

"And?"

"Then, when you grow up, you can learn many techniques. You can also control everything without being confused by the butler!"

"And then?"

Pete: "After that, you can live a happy and blissful life."

Cherry was being unreasonable. "But I have my parents and you. I'm already living a blissful life!"

Pete: "?"

He could only explain again, "Cherry, you have to make your life valuable. You can't live every day in vain! This is wrong!"

"Why? Making life valuable is to satisfy your own desires, right? It's also to make you happy? But the value of my existence is to get first place in the game! I'm being needed every day! Without me, Chesty can't even get first place in the national server!" Cherry patted her chest. "I'm very awesome!"

Pete: "...I can't out-talk you, but you have to learn knowledge, especially your English. You have to make up for your idioms and poems!"

"I know how to memorize 300 poems-" Cherry was very persistent.

Pete: "...But you don't know Mathematical Olympiad questions! You don't know how to do programming, and you don't know how to make a robot either. You still have a lot to learn!"

Cherry bit her lip. "Pete, what you're saying is too boring. Boohoo. But I also know someone who's very good with these things. He's a genius!"

With that, she picked up her phone and opened an application. There was a lot of chat content inside. She sent a voice message. "Are you there? My brother wants to compete with you!"

After sending the message, she said to Pete, "I met him overseas. He's five years old this year, just like you! Don't force me to study. Go compete with him!".

The other party replied with a voice message. It was a young voice, but this voice had a hint of ruffianism. "Where did you get a brother from? Don't you only have one brother?" Cherry: "My biological brother. My mother found my biological brother!"

The other party: "Tsk~ So what if he's your biological brother? I'll definitely beat him, but I don't have time to compete with him now."

Cherry: "Why? What are you busy with?"

The person said, "I'm dissecting a small animal. I plan to replace the rabbit's leg with another rabbit's."

Cherry was stunned. "Didn't your father stop you from playing with those things?"

As soon as she said this, the other party replied, "Hehehehe, my father will be away for a few days. I'm simply too free!"

Cherry asked again, "Where did your father go?"

The other party: "God knows. Anyway, that's not important. The important thing is that no one will care about me."

Cherry asked, "Doesn't your mother care about you?"

The other party: "I don't have a mother. I lived with my father alone."

Cherry: “??”

The other party replied, “Alright, let’s not talk about it. I’m busy. I’ll let your brother come and see how awesome I am another day!”

Cherry put down her phone in resignation.

Beside her, Pete looked at her curiously. “Who is this?”

Cherry tilted her head and explained, “This is a good friend I know from the Internet. His hobby is to grow wheat on cows. He can make the wheat smell like beef, dogs, rabbits, and dogs. He’s very smart. He once connected a dog’s body to a cat’s head for two hours. Unfortunately, they died in the end.”

Pete: “... Cherry, stay away from this person!”

Cherry was stunned and asked in confusion, “Why?”

Pete said seriously, “Because this person is either a lunatic, and everything he says is a lie, or he’s crazy! Why did he connect the dog’s body with the cat’s head? Did he torture the two pets to death just for fun?” At these words, Cherry thought of a child torturing two little pets and instantly shuddered.

She swallowed. “Pete, you make it sound so scary!”